

*Mary Frys Book of Salton &
Wm Stephenson 1822 in Wills*
ACCOUNT

Sarah OF THE *Stephenson*
LIFE, TRAVELS,

AND

CHRISTIAN EXPERIENCES

IN THE

Work of the Ministry

OF

SAMUEL BOWNAS. *W*

THE SECOND EDITION.

L O N D O N :

Printed and Sold by LUKE HINDE, at the Bible
in George-Yard, Lombard-Street, 1761.

ACCOUNT

THE

CHRISTIAN



BY

THE
PREFACE
TO THE
READER.

THE following Sheets exhibit to thy Perusal a *plain Man's* plain and undisguised Account of his own Progress in Religion : An artless Narrative of his sincere and hearty Endeavours, as much as in him lay, to promote the Doctrine of the Gospel of Christ in the Earth.

The Motives inducing him to undertake the Office of a *Preacher*, appear to have been perfectly consonant to the Precepts of Holy Writ, and to the Practice of Christ and his Apostles, *viz.*

1st. A clear, cogent and convincing Evidence of a divine Call, and heavenly Impulse thereunto.

2^{dly}. An indispensable Sense of his Duty necessarily obliging him to yield Obedience to that Call. And

3dly. The sweet Returns of inward Peace and divine Consolations accompanying his Obedience therein, did greatly conduce to his Confirmation and Perseverance in the Way of his Duty.

To the Performance of which he found himself measurably prepared and qualified ; for his own Experience of the Love of God, and of the Operations of his holy Spirit, in gradually purging out the Corruptions of his own Heart, did excite and augment in him a *Christian* Love to his fellow Creatures, attended with an Ardency of Zeal, and an incessant Desire, for their Conversion.

An inward Purgation from Sin is so necessary, and so essential a Qualification of a Gospel Minister, that no Man can be such without it ;

Nor doth God send any unclean Messengers on his Errand :

It being the constant Method of his divine Wisdom, under this Gospel Dispensation, through the purging of his holy Spirit, to cleanse and purify the Inside of every Vessel, which he permits to be made Use of in the Service of his Sanctuary. Wherefore,

Every unsanctified Pretender to preach the Gospel of Christ, deserves to have his Mouth stoppt with that unanswerable Query of our blessed Saviour to the *Pharisees* of old ; *O Generation of Vipers, how can ye, being evil, speak good Things ?* for out
of

The P R E F A C E.

of the Abundance of the Heart the Mouth speaketh.
Mat. xii. 34.

A Practice of this Nature abounds with the grossest of Absurdities, and stands emphatically exploded, even in the Time of the *Mosaick Law*, by the Royal Psalmist, in these Words: *Unto the Wicked God saith, What hast thou to do to declare my Statutes, or that thou shouldest take my Covenant in thy Mouth?* Psalm l. 16.

But alas! *Self-Interest* prompts Men to turn a deaf Ear even to the most divine Expostulations, and unholy Persons will, in despite of the most express Prohibitions, continue to intrude themselves beyond their Bounds; and will be still busying and employing themselves about external Circumstances and Ceremonies, while the Life, Spirit and Substance of true Religion is placed above their Reach, and unattainable by them, until it shall please God, in the exceeding Riches of his Grace, to cleanse their Hearts from all Unrighteousness; of which Conversion we heartily wish for a nearer Prospect than we can discern at present.

We now return to the Author of the ensuing Narrative, who was another Sort of Preacher; a free Giver of what himself had freely received, a liberal and open-hearted Communicator of his religious Experiences unto all other Men, without Respect of Persons.

He directed all the Sheep of Christ to follow the Voice of Christ himself, the good Shepherd, whose Omnipresence renders his Voice audible to every one of his Sheep, however separate or dispersed throughout the World.

His Conversation was free, generous and affable; neither did he shun the Society of those whom he was sent to convert; his Mission being somewhat correspondent to that of his Lord and Master, who declared concerning himself: *I am not come to call the Righteous, but Sinners to Repentance.* Mat. ix. 13.

He was of a grave Deportment, and of a tall, comely and manly Aspect: His publick Preaching was attended with such a divine Authority and majestick Innocence, as commanded the Attention of his Hearers; and his Voice being clear, strong and distinct, was capable of conveying his profitable Exhortations to the Ears and Understandings of a very numerous Auditory; of which a remarkable Instance appears in his Preaching at *Jedburgh in Scotland*, mentioned in Pag. 38 of his Account,

His literal Accomplishments were but small, extending little farther than to enable him to read the Scriptures in his Mother Tongue; yet by constant Use and Application, he became thoroughly versed therein, and enabled by the Force of their Testimony, to confront and confute the Gainsayers

sayers of his Doctrine, which was in all Points strictly agreeable to, and consonant therewith.

In the religious Society to which he was joined, he conducted himself as a Man of Peace and Prudence, chusing to walk in the plain and middle Path, without declining to any Extream; so that he neither idolized *Forms*, nor contemned *good Order*.

His Estimation and Repute among his Friends and Neighbours, may appear by the Testimony of the Monthly and Quarterly - meetings of *Bridport* in *Dorsetshire*, to which he belonged, given forth since his Decease, wherein they say, that
 “ It pleased the Lord to endue him with a large
 “ Gift in the Ministry, in which he was a faithful
 “ Labourer, and gave himself up for that Service;
 “ that he had a Gift of Utterance superior to
 “ many, sound in Judgment and Doctrine, and
 “ very convincing to the Understandings of those
 “ that heard him.”

This Testimony concerning him is true, and a Man of his Penetration and Capacity could not but discern his own Improvement in the Gift he had received: Wherefore he stood upon his Guard, lest through Self-love and Conceit, he should depart from that Humility, which is the Ornament of every Gospel Minister, as in Pag. 32 he has particularly observed.

Which *Christian* Virtue was generally his Concomitant, during the Course of his Pilgrimage; and is remarkable in the Composure of this Account, in keeping it clear from, and unfullied, with any the least Tincture or Symptom of Self-Appause.

As in Preaching, his Declarations proceeded from his Heart, so in Writing, his Relations of his Services, and his Exhortations, sprang from the same Fountain.

Wherefore we recommend to thy serious Consideration what he has written, as comprehended in that excellent Description of a good Man, given by CHRIST himself, *Luke vi. 45. A good Man, out of the good Treasure of his Heart, bringeth forth that which is good.*

May the Good brought forth out of this good Man's Heart effectually reach unto thine, and through the divine Blessing operate to thy spiritual Benefit, Growth and Improvement in that which is good.

AP 59

So shall the Design of the deceased Author, in leaving behind him this Account of his Life and Travels, be in some degree answered, and the Prefixer of this *Preface* shall have the End he aims at, who with sincere Desires for the saving Health and Welfare of thee and all Mankind, takes his Leave, and bids thee heartily *Farewell.*

J. BESSE.

AN
ACCOUNT
OF THE
LIFE and TRAVELS
OF
SAMUEL BOWNAS.

I Was born in *Westmoreland*, within the Compass of Great *Strickland* Monthly-meeting, about the Year 1676, and was entered in that Register. My Father dying before I was one Month old, I never knew him, but I have been inform'd that he was very honest and zealous for Truth in his Time, having been a considerable Sufferer for the Cause of Religion, both in the Loss of Goods and Liberty, as the Meeting was kept in his House in some of the hottest Time of Persecution in King *Charles* the Second's Reign.

Being thus left so young, and my Mother having but a scanty Subsistence of about 4^l 10s. a Year, with a Dwelling for herself and two Children, I was about Thirteen put to learn the Trade of a *Blacksmith*, with an Uncle who used me unkindly; but I was afterwards put Apprentice to a very honest Friend belonging to *Brigflats* Meeting near *Sedberg* in *Yorkshire*, whose Name was *Samuel Parat*.

All

All this Time I had no Taste of Religion, but devoted myself to Pleasure, as much as my Circumstances would permit, though my Mother had kept me very strict while I was under her Care, and would frequently in Winter Evenings take Opportunities to tell me sundry Passages of my dear Father's Sufferings, admonishing me so to live, that I might be worthy to bear the Name of so good a Man's Son, and not bring a Reproach on myself and Parents; also frequently putting me in mind, that if she should be taken away, I should greatly miss her, both for Advice and other Ways to assist myself; advising me to fear the Lord now in my Youth, that I might be favoured with his Blessing; which frequently brought me into great Tenderness, being afraid that she would die before I was capable to live in the World; and she took me frequently to Meetings with her, where she often had some Words in Testimony.

Persecution being still very hot, and Friends lock'd out of our Meeting-house at *Strickland*, we met at the Door; and I remember at two several Times when I was a Child, and came to Meeting with my Mother, that the Informers came; the first Time the Meeting had been over about half an Hour, the second Time not quite so much, so that we escaped their Hands both Times; but sundry Friends were in Prison at *Appleby* for attending that Meeting, whom my dear Mother went to visit, taking me along with her, and we had a Meeting with the Prisoners, several Friends from other Places being likewise there by Appointment. What I observed was, though very young, how tender and broken they were; and I was very inquisitive of my Mother, why they *cried so much*, (which we called *Greeting*) and *thee greet too*, (said I) *why did thee?* She told me that I could not understand the Reason of it then, but when I grew up more to Man's Estate I might.

Now

Now to return to my Apprenticeship; I had a very kind loving Master and Mistress, and I had Meat enough, and Work enough, but had little Consideration about Religion, nor any Taste thereof. On First-days I frequented Meetings, but the greater Part of the Time I slept, and took no Account of Preaching, nor received any other Benefit, than, being there, kept me out of bad Company, which indeed is a very great Service to Youth. I also took much Liberty in Discourse, and was taken Notice of as a witty, sensible young Man: But often on my Bed I ruminated on my Way of Life with Reluctance, yet frequently fell into the same Way again. I never was given to Swearing, nor any very gross Vice, but what I gave way to the most, was Jestings, and Turns of Wit to provoke Mirth, which gave me often (after it was over) a heavy Heart; and thus I went on for near three Years.

One First-day, being at Meeting, a young Woman, named *Anne Wilson*, was there and preached; she was very zealous, and fixing my Eye upon her, she with a great Zeal pointed her Finger at me, uttering these Words with much Power, viz. 'A traditional Quaker; thou comest to Meeting as thou went from it (the last Time) and goes from it as thou came to it, but art no better for thy coming; what wilt thou do in the End?' This was so pat to my then Condition, that, like *Saul*, I was smitten to the Ground, as it might be said, but turning my Thoughts inward, in secret I cried, *Lord, what shall I do to help it?* And a Voice as it were spoke in my Heart saying, *Look unto me, and I will help thee*; and I found much Comfort, which made me shed abundance of Tears. Then I remembred what my Mother had told me some Years before, *that when I grew up more to Man's Estate, I should know the Reason of that Tendernefs and Weeping*, and so I now did to purpose.

I went

I went home with a heavy Heart, and could neither eat nor sleep as I used to do; but my Work never succeeded better in my Hands than it did at this Time, nor my Mind ever less in it: My Conduct indeed, as well as Countenance, was much altered, so that several in the Family were doubtful that I should fall into a kind of melancholy Distraction; but I longed for the Meeting-day, and thought it a very long Week. When the Time of Meeting came, my Mind was soon fixed and staid upon God, and I found an uncommon Enjoyment, which gave me great Satisfaction, my Understanding being opened, and all the Faculties of my Mind so quick, that I seemed another Man; a divine and spiritual Sweetness abiding with me Night and Day, for some Time, and I began to see and understand the Scriptures, and the Nature of preaching the Doctrine of the Gospel in the Power and Spirit, plainly seeing a Difference between a Preacher of the Letter and of the Spirit, which till then I was wholly ignorant of, and unacquainted with, not having before that, the least Degree that I could perceive of divine Understanding; but then on looking back, and considering upon what I had heard such and such Friends preach, which at that Time I did not understand, I now understood it clearly; which was a plain Demonstration to me, that all divine Knowledge is from divine Light, which we can't comprehend, until we are assisted so to do by a Visitation from Heaven.

And now the Scriptures, and Ministry from the Openings of the Spirit, seemed so clear and plain to my Understanding, that I wondered that any Body remained unconvinced, supposing them to see the Truths of the Gospel in the same Light that I then did; and that Saying of the Apostle, wherein he asserts his Knowledge of the Son of God being come, from *their receiving an Understanding from him*, was clearly discovered to me, so that now I plainly saw a Distinction between the Children of Light, and of this

this World; the spiritual, and the natural Man; and that the natural Man could not receive the Things of the Spirit of God, they being Foolishness to him; he can't know them, because they are known *only by* ^{1 Cor. ii.} *the Spirit*, as the Apostle asserts; and I found myself ¹⁴ much improved in divine Wisdom and saving Knowledge.

As I was going to Meeting walking alone, it came very livingly into my Mind, that if I was but faithful and obedient to the heavenly Vision, I should soon be qualified to teach others, and more especially, as I saw by Experience wherein my Shortness had been, in being contented and easy with a Form of Truth and Religion, which I had only by Education, having been brought up in Plainness of both Habit and Speech; but all this, though very good in its Place, did not make me a true *Christian*; I was but a *traditional Quaker*, and that by Education only, and not from the Scriptures, because they were as a Book sealed to me. And I now saw plainly that Education, though never so carefully administered, would not do the Work; although a pious Education ought by no means to be neglected, but all Parents and Guardians ought to be stirred up to their Duty in that Respect; yet we must consider, that it is not in the Power of Parents, or the most pious Tutors, to *confer Grace*, which is the Gift of God alone; nor can any come into the true Fold but by this *Door*, as said our Saviour concerning himself. Thus it plainly appeared to me, there was no other Way but this, *viz.* by the *Spirit* ^{John i. 1,} *of Christ alone*, to attain to true Faith, which works ^{2, 3.} by Love, and gives Victory over our Infirmities and evil Deeds, working such a Change in us, that we can in Truth from Experience say, *we are born from* ^{John iii. 3,} *above*; and by Virtue of that Birth only, is the *true* ^{4, 5.} *Knowledge of the Kingdom*, and the Things of God *attained*, and by no other Way or Means, although never so well contriv'd by human Art: And being experimentally

experimentally sensible of this Change wrought in my Mind, it look'd the more likely, that I might in Time be qualified to speak to others of my own Experience of the Operation of the Spirit in my Mind, not thinking the Time so near at hand, at it appeared when I came to the Meeting; for I had not sat long therein, before a great Weight fell upon me, with some Words to speak: But I consider'd, (being willing to be my own Carver) that it was too soon to undertake such a Task, being then but as an Infant in Religion; not remembring the small Time between

Acts 12. 20. *Paul's Conversion and his preaching the Gospel: Also, my former Conduct with my Companions, (many of whom were in the Meeting at the same Time) stood much in my Way, for my Reformation was but three Weeks old that very Day; so that I reasoned thus, That so sudden a Change would hardly be borne: Therefore I could not, for that Time, for these Reasons give up, and the Burden was taken from me: But after that Meeting it came upon me again with double Weight, and affected me so very greatly, that I was much alone, and my Countenance so altered with weeping, that my Master took Occasion to enquire into the Matter, how it was with me? I gave him as plain an Account as I was capable of, which he was much affected with indeed, and broke into Tears: What I feared was, that I had by Disobedience so much offended, that I should be cast off for ever: But he, by sundry Exhortations from Scripture and otherwise, endeavoured to pacify me, not doubting but that I should have the like Offer made me again,*

Judges vi. *putting me in mind of Gideon's Fleece, &c.*

When next Meeting-day came, I went in great Weakness and Fear, and could rather have gone elsewhere, than to Meeting that Day; however, some Time after I was in the Meeting, I felt the like Concern as at the Meeting before, and I sat under the Weight of it till the Meeting was almost over, and then

then hardly knew how I got upon my Feet, but did, and broke out with a loud Voice in these Words, *viz.* ' Fear not them which kill the Body, but are not able to kill the Soul ; but rather fear him which is able to destroy both Body and Soul in Hell. I say, fear you him who will terribly shake the Earth, that all which is moveable may be shaken and removed out of the Way, that that which is immovable may stand.' This was all I had to say at that Time. But oh ! what Joy and Sweetness I felt afterward I can't express, and the Pleasure of my Mind appeared in my Countenance, so that my Master took Notice, and spoke of it so feelingly, which plainly demonstrated he was a Partaker with me of the same Rejoicing in himself, as at the Birth of an only Son : This was about the Year 1696, on that called *Christmas-day*, it falling that Year upon the First-day of the Week.

Thus having (as it may be said) broke the Ice, the next Time was not quite so hard, but I said very little, and seldom appeared for a Year or two, having then about three Years of my Apprenticeship to serve, which I did with Fidelity and Truth.

In the last Year of my Time, I found some considerable working in my Mind to visit *Scotland*, being very rarely without some Degree of divine Virtue on my Mind, either by Night or Day ; therefore I thought, if it was so with me then, it would be much more so when I had nothing to mind but divine Things ; but I found it otherwise, of which in its Place.

I may not omit, that sometime above two Years after I first spoke in Meetings, I open'd the New-Testament at that Passage spoken by our Saviour, *Mat. x. 28.* to the same Effect with what was first opened on my Mind, as mentioned above, which then I knew nothing of, as being the Sayings of Christ to warn them against the Fear of Men ; although no doubt

doubt I had read it, but had taken so little Notice of what I read, that it was to me as if it had been never writ. But it was a great Comfort to me, that I was thus opened in a material Point of Doctrine of our blessed Lord at my first setting out.

About this Time I had a Desire to visit a neighbouring Meeting called *Yelland*, it being the first that I ever had a Concern to visit, and I desired my dear Friend *Isaac Alexander* to go with me. Agreeing upon the Time, I went to *Isaac's* Brother's House the Seventh-day Evening before, where *Isaac* lived; and he and I went to visit *James Wilson* and his Parents that Evening: *James* was under Convincement, but not his Parents. We had some Conference, but being called to Supper, left off abruptly. After Supper I could not be easy without repeating my Visit, and *James's* Mother being very quick in the Scriptures, she desired my Judgment on those Texts in *Isaiah* and *Peter*, viz. *Behold, I create new Heavens, and new Earth, wherein dwells Righteousness*: And my Understanding was opened to preach unto her the new Birth so effectually, that she was thoroughly convinced, and continued an honest Friend to her dying Day, going to Meeting the very next Day, and so held on while able to attend Meetings.

Now my Time of Servitude being near at an End, and my Master being very willing to keep me in his Service, spoke to me about it, which gave me an Opportunity to open my Mind to him concerning my intended Visit to *Scotland*; and he then told me, to acquaint some of the Elders in the Meeting therewith, for it was needful that I should have a Certificate, to shew the Unity of the Brethren with my Journey; and accordingly I did, and had a Certificate: *Isaac Alexander* was my Companion, and had a Certificate likewise. So we set out; *Kendal* being the first Meeting, and then to *Preston*, *Yelland*, *Height*, *Hawkeshead*, and visited Part of *Lancashire*, and *Yorkshire*, in about
three

three or four Weeks. But the Poverty of my Spirit was so exceeding great and bitter, that I could scarcely bear it, but cried out aloud ; and it was so surprising to my Companion, that we being by ourselves walking on foot, he feared it would be too hard for me, for I complained that I was *deceived* or *mistaken* ; because, while I was in my Master's Work, I rarely by Night or Day was without some degree of divine Virtue on my Mind, but now I could feel nothing but the Bitterness of Death and Darkness ; all Comfort was hid from me for a Time, and I was baptized into Death indeed. As we went along, I said to *Isaac*, with a Vehemency of Spirit, *Ob ! that I was in my Master's Work again, and favoured with my former Enjoyments of divine Life, how acceptable it would be !* We came at our Journey's End to one *Miles Birket's*, who was more than usually kind to us ; but alas ! he did not know my State and Poverty. Next Day we went to another Meeting at *Hawkeshead*, and it was a little better with me, but I was very poor ; and so we performed our Journey in about a Month, and he returned to his Father's House, and I to my Master *Parat's*.

I was now very loath to go to *Scotland*, having been proved with so much Poverty of Spirit, and indeed the Cup was so bitter I could hardly bear it ; however, I kept my Mind to myself, and *Isaac* and I set forward on foot, visiting Part of *Cumberland* in our Way, and I thought he had very fine Service, so much superior to mine, that after him I was afraid to lessen or hurt what Good he had done ; and before him, I was afraid to stand in his Way. He was very much admired indeed, and some were convinced by his Ministry : We accomplished that Journey in about two Months Time.

At our Return Hay-harvest came on, and I went to mowing, and on the Meeting-days went just where my Mind led me, and grew in my Ministry very much, and the Lord let me see his Kindness to lead

Mat. v. 3.
Rom. vii.
24.

me through that State of Poverty, which was of great Service to qualify me to speak to others in the like Condition, and that Trials of sundry kinds were for my Improvement and Good, tending to my Establishment in the true Root of a divine and spiritual Ministry; and the Doctrine of our Saviour and his Apostle did much comfort me, so that I became, in the Opinion of several, an able Minister, although but short, seldom standing a Quarter of an Hour. But alas! I saw since that, I was but a meer Babe or Infant in the Work.

The Summer past over, and by my Harvest-work at Hay and Corn, I pick'd up a little Money, being just penny-less before, so that I travelled to a Meeting, before I got to Work, 14 or 15 Miles, three times forth and back on foot all alone, with only three Half-pence, being all the Money I then had; and thinking to refresh myself in the Way, when I came near the House of Entertainment, I found myself so so strong and cheerful, that I thought I might want it more at another Time, and so kept it.

Towards the Fall of the Year I bought a Horse, and put myself in a Condition for another Journey with my old Companion *Isaac* again; and we thought either of us pretty sufficient to hold a Meeting; however, I was to go with him through *Bishoprick* and *Yorkshire*, and he was to go with me into the West, as to *Wilts*, *Somersetshire*, *Devonshire*, &c. We had not proceeded far, before I was very much shut up, and had no Satisfaction at all in going farther with him; I told him how it was with me, and we were both willing to part; and I went to be at *York* on First-day, and meeting with dear *John Richardson*, I laid my Concern before him, and as a nursing Father he spoke very encouragingly to me, and he got Meetings appointed for me at *Wetherby*, and so forward towards *Doncaster*. I went on in great Fear, and after Meeting at *Wetherby*, *Benjamin Brown* spoke very encouragingly,

couragingly, that *the Lord would enlarge my Gift ; and when thou findest it so, said he, don't value thyself upon it, but give the Honour of it where it is due, and keep humble, and God will bless thee, and make thee a useful Member in his Hand.*

My next Meeting was at *Wakefield*, which was very much to my Comfort and Encouragement. Then to *Pontefract*, where I had no Cause to complain ; but there was a Friend, that after Meeting did cavil and find a deal of Faults with what I had said, which brought some Uneasiness upon me : But being afterwards told, *be used to do so, and that he was not in Unity*, that brought me off pretty light and easy ; so I went from thence to *Doncaster* on the Seventh-day, it being Market-day there : I was conducted to *Thomas Aldam's* Quarters, he being in Town, who soon came and look'd at me, I thought *austerely*, first enquiring, *whence I came, and if I had a Certificate ?* To all which I gave proper Answers, and shewed him my Certificate ; all this seemed agreeable, and he undertook to appoint Meetings forward, and sent me home with his Son : But not having ever been so closely examined before, this grew in my Mind, and fearing how I should come off, *Thomas Aldam* being a noted Minister, it was Cause of some Uneasiness ; but at last he came home, and was very tender and kind indeed.

Next Day, being First-day, we repaired to Meeting, and I came off beyond what I expected by much, preach'd almost an Hour, so that I was very chearful in my Spirit after it, and we had a little Opportunity in the Evening, and all ended brave and well : So the Week following I went to *Blithe*, and took Meetings in course as they lay by *Maplebeck* to *Nottingham*. At *Maplebeck* there was a brave old living Friend, with whom I had great Comfort, his Name was *John Camm* : At this Place I had the very best Meeting that I had ever had, and it had a very remarkable Effect upon me ; for I began to think the Bitterness

and Aguish of Death, which I had gone through before, might now be over in a great Degree, and I should go on smother and with more Ease for Time to come, for the Friends shewed me much Respect, and I was visited in the Evening, and Morning before I left them, by sundry that lived nigh : In short, I thought more of myself than I had done before, that I remember. Two or three of them went with me to *Nottingham*, seeming much pleased with my Company ; and it being Seventh-day, I was there on First-day at two Meetings, came off tolerable well, but not like as at *Maplebeck*. The Third-day following I was at *Castle-dunnington*, where was a fine Collection of Friends ; I preach'd some Time amongst them, but found not that Authority and Life, as I thought, to attend me as before ; however, I desired another Meeting with them that Evening, which was readily assented to, which was very large, considering that Place. I seemed very poor and low, and blamed myself much for appointing another Meeting in so poor and weak a Frame of Mind ; the Meeting came on, and proved better than I expected : But I was very low, and it being a clear Moonlight Night, I walked into the Friend's Orchard behind his House, bemoaning myself very much, as having lost my Guide, and fallen from that happy Condition I was in the Week before : The Friend of the House finding I tarried long, came out to me, having a Sense of my low State and Condition, so that enquiring how I did, he began to speak very much in praise of those two Meetings, and of the Service I had in them. But all this did not raise my Spirits : We went in, but he perceived I was very low, and he and his Wife endeavour'd to comfort me ; his Wife had a fine Gift of the Ministry, and she told me some Experiences she had gone through, but all did not do, nor come near my Condition.

Next

Next Day I went to *Swannington* in *Leicestershire*, and there was a fine Body of Friends again; and I had not sat long, before I felt, as I thought, as good an Authority to preach as ever, and stood up, not doubting an open, satisfactory Meeting: But I had not stood above fifteen, if so many Minutes, before all was shut up, and it seemed to me, as though both the Sun and Air were darkened. I sat down under a great Cloud, to think what I should do, appealing to God, as having no ill Design, but much otherwise, and earnestly in secret desired Help; when immediately I heard, as though a Voice had spoken intelligibly, 'Thou runs, and God has not sent thee; thou speaks, but God don't speak by thee; therefore thou shalt not profit the People.'

It may be thought I was bad before, but much worse now, I being then under the very Hour and Power of Death and Darknes, and at my Wits-end what to do; and under this great Temptation divers Ways presented, such as *my turning myself out of the Line of Friends*; which I found would be somewhat hard to do, by reason I always had a Guide from one Place to another: Then, *to turn Home again*, and by that Method I might get rid of Friends as Guides, and make the best of my Way to some Port in *Ireland*, sell my Horse, and get Work (where I was not known) at my Trade: But then the Honour of the Monthly-meeting, which had given me so good a Certificate, would be affected by my so doing: And having considered of sundry Ways to take, at last this presented, *To make away with myself in some River or Pond, as though it had been an Accident*, and this would cover all. Thus for a Time I was bewildered, not seeing where I was; but since it plainly appeared I was under the Influence of the Spirit of *Antichrist*. Then begging heartily for Help, I fell on my Knees, and prayed with that Fervency, that few under the Roof but were melted into Tears, and it was such a Time

as I never had before nor since in Prayer, as I remember : Thus that Meeting ended. Next I went to a Town called *Hinckley*, and there was a considerable Number of Friends and other People ; I was extremely low and poor, but had a comfortable Meeting, which much healed me, and set me to rights again.

Then I visited *Leicestershire* pretty generally, and there was a Woman of some Account (her Name was *Jemima Mountney*) who was convinced, and she was with me at sundry Meetings, and was exceeding tender and loving, being thoroughly reached and satisfied. When we parted, she was so open-hearted that I was called aside by her, and after having said something to me about her inward Condition, she offered me some Pieces of Gold, which I told her, *I durst not touch* ; she very courteously, and with a becoming genteel Mein, told me, *she was both able and willing, and as she had no other Way, that she could shew her Gratitude for that spiritual Good she had received by my Ministry, she could do no less than that, beseeching that I would receive it, as the true Token of her Love and Respect*. In answer, I said, *It was what I never had done, nor could I now do it ; but all the Reward I desired and expected was, that she might carefully, with a sincere Heart, endeavour that her Obedience did keep pace with her Knowledge, the bearing of which would much rejoice my Soul*. We parted in great Love and Tenderness, I heard that sundry others were convinced in that Neighbourhood. A very honest Friend, whose Name was *Brooks*, took great Pains to get the seeking People to Meeting, and I was very much enlarged in pertinent Matter, suitable to the States of such seeking Souls.

Out of *Leicestershire*, being very well rewarded for the Bitterness I suffered before I came into it (which, as before, was as much as I could bear) I passed into *Warwickshire*,

Warwickshire, and had some good Opportunities in that County, as at *Warwick* and sundry other Places.

I found I often hurt myself by speaking too fast, and too loud, against which I endeavoured to guard as much as I could ; but oft, when I felt my Heart filled with the Power of divine Love, I was apt to forget myself and break out ; I therefore found it proper to stop, and after a short Pause, with some secret short Prayer for Preservation, and that I might be supplied with Matter and Power, which might do the Hearers good, I thus went on, and grew sensibly in Experience and Judgment, and became in some small Degree skilful in dividing of the Word. I also had been straitned in my Mind respecting searching the Scriptures, lest I should thereby be tempted to lean upon them, and by gathering either Manna or Sticks on the Sabbath-day, Death should ensue ; but at last I had Freedom to examine the Text, and to consider where the Strength of the Argument lay, both before and after the Words I had repeated : By which Conduct I saw I was often very defective, in not laying hold of the most suitable Part to confirm the Subject or Matter I was upon, and this Conduct did me great Service : But then another Difficulty stood in my Way, which was this ; *some former Openings would come up*, which I durst not meddle with, lest that by so doing I should become formal, and lose that divine Spring which I had always depended upon ; but the Lord was pleased to shew me, that *old Matter opened in new Life*, was *always new*, and that it was the *Renewings* of the Spirit alone which made it *new*, and that the principal Thing I was to guard against was, not in my *own Will* to endeavour to bring in *old Openings*, without the Aid of the Spirit ; and that if I stood single and resign'd to the divine Will, I should be preserved from all *Errors* of that Nature.

Out of *Warwickshire* I travelled into *Worcestershire*, visiting sundry Meetings in that County, and found a fresh Supply every Day. I was at *Worcester* on First-day, and after the Meeting in the Forenoon, an ancient Friend examined me very closely, *from whence I came*, and *for a Certificate*; to all which I gave him Answers: My Certificate being at my Quarters in my Saddle-bag, he could not then see it; but I had a very good Meeting as I thought, and my Landlord *William Pardoe*, a brave sensible Elder, advised me not to be uneasy at the old Friend's examining me so, *for*, said he, *he does so to every Stranger*. We went to Meeting in the Afternoon, which was very large, and I was largely opened, and had, as I thought, very good Service; but the old Friend, after the Meeting, was upon me in the same Strain to see my Certificate, but I had it not then about me neither, at which he seemed much displeased: I made no Reply, but told him, *I was very willing he should see it*; but my Landlord took him up, and told him, *he thought the young Man had already shewn us his best Certificate in both the Meetings; but nevertheless* (said he) *come to my House in the Evening, and thou shalt see it*: So we parted. My Landlord thought he had shewed himself disagreeable in his Conduct, and fearing it would be an Uneasiness to me, spoke very tenderly, and like a nursing Father encouraged me, by saying, *I could not shew him a better Confirmation that I was anointed for the Ministry, than I had already done*. So in the Evening, after it was dark, he and many other Friends came; but my Landlord, the old Friend and I, went aside, and I let him see what he desired so much to see; he read it, being much pleased with it, and knowing sundry Friends that had signed it, enquired after them. We went to our Friends again, who were much increased in Number, and we had a heavenly Season, being thoroughly baptized together: We

We parted in great Love and Sweetness, and the old Friend was exceeding kind.

From thence I went into *Gloucestershire*, and visited Part of that County, by *Tewkesbury* to *Cheltenham*, *Gloucester*, *Payneswick*, *Nailsworth*, and *Tedbury*, and I had sundry good Opportunities : One young Woman was convinced at *Tedbury*, that became a very good Friend.

From thence I went into *Wiltshire* and *Hampshire*, as far as *Ringwood*, and so to *Pool* and *Weymouth* ; called at *Wareham* and *Corfe*, and had a Meeting at each Place, but nothing worthy noting at either of them : So I travelled to *Bridport*, *Lyme*, *Membury*, *Chard* and *Crewkern*, and back to *Sommerton*, *Puddimore*, *Masson* to a Funeral, and to *Yeovil* on First-day. Thus having visited *Somersetshire*, I went away into *Devonshire* as far as *Exeter* ; then turned up towards *Taunton*, taking Meetings in my Way towards *Bristol*, but nothing happened of Weight.

I staid in *Bristol*, and visited Meetings about the City near five Weeks, and from thence I found my Mind was much drawn to visit *Wales*, and I took the Quarterly-meeting of *Hereford* in my Way, which was held annually at *Amelly*, and there I met with my dear Friend *Isaac Alexander* : We were glad to see each other, as well as to hear each other, which when we did, it appeared to me that *Isaac* was improved considerably, and he said the same of me, observing, that I preached the *practical* Doctrine of the Gospel, he thought, more than he did ; for his preaching was very much in *Comparisons* and *Allegories*, which he apprehended was not so plain and easy to the Understandings of the People, as what I had to say. We had now an Opportunity of opening our Minds to each other, which was of great Service to us both, having sundry Meetings together, and we had Drawings for the Yearly-meeting at *Glanneedlefs* in *Wales* : This Opportunity seemed very agreeable to

us ;

us ; there were sundry Friends of note, *Benjamin Bangs* and others out of *Cheeshire* ; the People came in abundance, and at Times were very rude, but in the main it was a serviceable Meeting. After that I visited *Wales*, appointing from the Yearly-meeting sundry Meetings, as far as was thought proper at once, and a good old Friend, *Philip Leonard*, offered to be my Companion, which was of great Service to me. I was very poor and low at most Meetings in that Journey, by reason but few of the People could well understand what I said in sundry Places : But *Philip* stood up after I had done, and in part interpreted what I had said, but I did not seem to be quite easy in my Mind.

Isa. iii. 16.
to the End.

Isaac went to *Bristol* Yearly-meeting, and was very zealous against unnecessary Fashions and Superfluities in both Sexes, infomuch, that some thought he did, in his Words against them, exceed the Bounds of Modesty : But he might plead the Example of the Prophet *Isaiab* in that respect. But the chief Objection was, concerning his prophesying of a great Mortality, which the Lord was about to bring as a Judgment upon the People, for their Pride and Wickedness ; which he thought it his Duty to deliver in their Yearly-meeting, as a Warning for all to mind their Ways, lest being taken unprepared, their Loss should be irreparable : Which he did in such strong and positive Terms, that Friends were afraid he was too much exalted in himself : Upon which, some of the Elders thought proper to converse with, and examine him concerning this extraordinary Message which he had delivered : But what he said to them, not being satisfactory, they advised him to proceed no farther on his Journey, but to return Home ; which he did under great Trouble, and was there received in much Love and Tendernefs, and appeared in his Gift very excellent, and grew in divine Wisdom and Power, being of great Service in the Ministry wherever he came,

And

And he having a Concern to visit the Churches abroad, and acquainting some of our Elders therewith, they thought it not proper for him to go, till something was done to satisfy the Friends of *Bristol*; and upon their Enquiry of *Isaac*, he gave them a single and honest Account how it was with him at that Time, respecting his Concern: So Friends took it in hand, and wrote to *Bristol*, neither justifying nor condemning him, but recommended Charity and Tenderness towards him. And from *Bristol*, Friends answered, *That with open Arms they could receive him, believing him to be a sincere young Man, who intended very well; and they were glad he took their Admonition right, and had owned it had been of Service to him.* Thus ended this Affair, and *Isaac* said, *He could not think hard of his Brethren in doing what they did, though he could not then see that he had missed his Way, in delivering that Prophecy:* Thus shewing forth a lively Instance of a warm Zeal, tempered with a due Regard to the Sense and Advice of his Brethren and Elders, and the Unity of the Church, which doubtless tended to his own Comfort and Preservation.

When I heard of this Affair, I took it so much to Heart, that it was almost too much for me, and a Concern came upon me to go to *London* with the like Message, but with this Caution; first, to advise with some faithful Brethren before I delivered it: And I wrote to *Isaac* to let him know it, which gave him great Ease. Accordingly I went to *London*, and got sundry Brethren together, viz. *James Dickinson, John Bowstead, Peter Fearon, Benjamin Bangs, Robert Haydock*, and some others, and gave them a plain and honest Account how it came upon me, which was not till after I heard how my dear Companion was returned Home from *Bristol*; adding, that I had acquainted *Isaac* how it was with me, that he might know my Sympathy with him.

The Friends seeing what he had wrote, found there was a strong Sympathy between us, and very justly supposed

supposed, *that* to be the moving, if not only, Cause of the Concern I was under, and very tenderly advised me to keep it in my own Breast, till I found how the Lord would order it; for, if he was the Author, I should find more of it; if not, it would die of course: But if I found it grew upon me, I should let any of them know it, and ~~they~~ would consider what Steps to take in a Matter of so great Consequence, as going forth in a Prophecy of that Nature. And the fatherly Kindness they ~~shewed~~ me was very affecting to me, one or other of them making it their Business to visit me every Day; and, as they said, I found the Concern went off, and I became easy without publishing it.

After this I had divers very acceptable Opportunities in *London*, during the Time of the Yearly-meeting, and afterwards visited Friends towards *Leeds* in *Yorkshire*, and in my Way thither had very agreeable Service in both the Counties of *Leicester* and *Nottingham*, and at sundry other Places.

From *Leeds* I went to the Yearly-meeting at *York*, which was very large, and many publick Friends; but I was hid, as it were, and made very little Appearance at that Meeting.

From thence I travelled homewards, visiting Friends as I went, and was gladly receiv'd by them. And I found my Ministry very acceptable; as it increased upon me, I was very humble and low in Mind, knowing therein my Strength consisted, and Safety from Temptation.

I being now in a Streight, what Course to take to get a little Money, my Linen and Woolen both wanting to be repaired, I met with a young Man newly set up in his Trade, with whom I proposed to work, and he was ready to comply with my Offer, supposing it would be a Means to improve him: So we agreed, and I begun with him, and found it answered much better than Harvest-work, so that I stored myself with
a little

a little Cash soon, and work'd hard all that Summer, and in the Fall of the Year prepar'd myself for a Journey with my good old Friend *Joseph Baines*.

We set out the latter End of the Sixth Month, and visited some Parts of *Yorkshire*, and so into *Lincolnshire*, *Suffolk* and *Norfolk*, and we did very well together; only I was afraid, that Friends took so much Notice of me, he would be uneasy; but he was so entirely innocent, and had so much of the Lamb in him, that he never did, that I could find, shew any Uneasiness, more than to give me a Caution with a Smile; *Sammy*, said he, (for I was mostly called so) *thou hadst need take care, Friends admire thee so much, thou dost not grow proud*; and indeed the Caution was very seasonable, as well as serviceable to me; which I saw and did acknowledge. This *Joseph* was (it might be said) an *Israelite* indeed, as meek as a Lamb, not great in the Ministry, but very acceptable, especially amongst other People, having a meek, quiet, easy Delivery, mostly in Scripture Phrases, with which he was well furnished, repeating them with very little or no Comment upon them, which some admired very much; and he had great Service at Funerals, being in a peculiar manner qualified for such Services: But he receiving an Account of some Troubles in his Family, it brought a very great Uneasiness upon him, and he returned Home.

I then visited most of the Meetings over again, and so I returned into *Huntingtonshire*, *Northamptonshire*, and so towards *Dorsetshire*, and *Somersetshire*, visiting Meetings as I went through Part of *Oxfordshire*. I had many Meetings, sometimes fourteen in a Week, and generally to Satisfaction. In almost every Parish where a Friend lived, we had a Meeting, besides which, sundry offered their Houses, who were not Friends, which we embraced. I came through Part of *Hampshire* and *Warwickshire*, and so back again to *Hampshire*, visiting Friends, and had many Meetings

in Places where none had been, and the People were much inclined, who were not Friends, to have Meetings at their Houses in many Places, and would desire Friends to conduct me to their Houses : So that although I was entirely unknown to most, yet there was very great Willingness to receive the Doctrine of Christ ; and sundry, I found afterwards, were convinced, by Accounts I received from Friends. The Teachers of the National Way, and Dissenters also, were much disturbed, and threatned what they would do, and that they would come and dispute ; and some of them came several Times, and got out of Sight, where they could hear and not be seen ; but never any gave me the least Disturbance all that Journey ; but some would say I was a Cheat (*viz.*) a Jesuit in disguise ; others, that I was brought up for the Pulpit, and for some Misdemeanour suspended ; and so they varied, according to their Imaginations : But I was very easy in my Service, and found my Heart very much enlarged : Some of the People took me to have a good Share of Learning, which, altho' it was false, serv'd for a Defence against some busy Men, who thought they could dispute about Religion and Doctrine, which I always endeavoured to avoid as much as possible, seldom finding any Advantage by such Work, but that it mostly ended in cavilling, and a Strife of Words.

I went through Part of *Dorsetshire*, and at *Sherborne* an old Friend was sick, and not expected to get over that Illness, and it came into my Mind *he would die of that Sickness*, and that *I must be at his Funeral, and preach with my Bible in my Hand*. This made me shrink, as fearing it was the Fruit of *Imagination*, but I kept it to myself, and had many Meetings about those Parts, as at *Yeovil, Puddimore, Masson, Weston, &c.* Besides this, a young Woman, which afterwards became my Wife, had strong hold of my Affections, and I had acquainted her Parents therewith, and had

Liberty

Liberty from them to lay it before their Daughter, which I did ; although at the same Time it was upon me to visit *America* before I entered into the State of Wedlock, which I also gave her to understand ; for I had reasoned in my own Mind, that it might be better to let it rest until my Return, if I lived ; but in answer to that, thus it appeared, That I might have some Offers there that might be a Snare to me, and by this prior Engagement I might be freed from all Temptations or Offers of that kind ; for if it once was known there, that I was already engaged, even that would command Silence on that Account ; so on this Consideration I made my Suit to her, who receiv'd it with such Modesty and Sweetness as was very engaging and obliging to me : But she had an Uncle, on whom she had some Dependance, who seemed much averse to it, and would have his Niece left at Liberty, that if any Thing offered in my Absence she might embrace it ; which I very readily complied with ; then he was pleased, only he would have me leave it under my Hand, which also I was very ready to do ; and more, *that is*, to stand bound myself, and leave her at Liberty : To which she objected, as *unreasonable* on her Part to desire such a Thing from me. So we parted, and I went to *Street, Glastonbury, Burnham, Sidcoat, Clareham, and Bristol*, having let slip out of my Memory the old Friend's Sickness at *Sherborne*.

I had not been many Hours in *Bristol*, before a Messenger came to desire *Benjamin Coole* to attend the Funeral, and *Benjamin* came to me to *Brice Webb's*, where I lodged, and told me how it was, and desired me to go ; but I pleaded sundry Excuses, first, my Horse was not fit, with other Objections, which were all removed. And accordingly I went to *Bruton* next Day, being the Seventh-day of the Week, and was at that small Meeting on First-day. The Funeral was on Second-day, which was exceeding large, *John Beere*

Beere from *Weymouth* being there, who had something to say, but not much : Then, as it was with me, I pull'd my Bible out of my Pocket, and opened it ; upon which the People gave more Attention than they had done before, and I had a very acceptable Time, often in the Course of my Matter referring to the Text for Proof, and giving an ample Testimony of the Value we put upon the Scriptures, earnestly pressing the careful reading of them, and advising to consider what they read, and to seek the Lord by Prayer, for Assistance and Power, that they might practice what they read, which was the ultimate End of reading, as well as the hearing of Preaching, for without Practice, it would avail but little ; with other Advice to the same Effect. And there being sundry Teachers of several Societies, one of them a *Baptist*, took hold of me after Meeting was ended, and desired some Conversation with me : I look'd at him earnestly, and desired to know if he had any Objection against any Part of what I had said ? if thou hast, said I, (speaking with an audible Voice, that stopt many of the Company) this is the most proper Place, the People being present ; for they thronged about us very much : This made him confess, that what he had heard was sound, and according to Scripture, being very well proved from the Text ; but he desired some private Discourse between ourselves at my Quarters, if I would permit it. I told him he might, I quarter'd at *Richard Fry's* ; and *Richard* being present, told him he should be welcome to come to his House, and so we parted : And when I came to *Richard's*, he said, we should hear no more of him, for that he had in his Discourses amongst his Hearers, spoken many very unhandsome Things against the *Quakers*, endeavouring to unchristian them, and prove them *Heathens* in denying the Ordinances : (A common Plea used by all our Adversaries) But this Upstart carried the Matter farther than some others did, by adding, that we denied

denied the Scriptures, and also would not allow of a Bible in any of our Meetings, nor did our Preachers ever use a Bible to prove any thing therefrom, that we preach'd to the People ; (with more to the same Purport) and as many of his Hearers were there, my appearing with a Bible, and so often referring to the Text for Proof, did no doubt put him and them also upon a Thought, of what had been preach'd before by him, amongst them, concerning the *Quakers*, which now appeared to be a manifest Untruth by what they had both seen and heard that Day : However, to be short, as *Richard Fry* thought, so it proved ; for he did not come at all near me, and so that went off well, and Truth was exalted above Lies and Falshood.

I returned back to *Bristol* well contented, being fill'd with Peace and Consolation. At my Return I gave my Friends *Benjamin Coole* and some others, a Relation of my Conduct, and *Benjamin* was much pleased I went there, and repeated what he had said before to persuade me to go, adding, he was pretty much assured it was my Place to go ; but that if he had known how it came into my Mind to preach with the Book in my Hand, although in the Sequel it proved right, yet he should have been afraid that more of *Imagination* than *Revelation* was in it ; therefore that would rather have backen'd him, than have been any Argument for him to have press'd my going so much as he did, by reason that he had found some Mistakes committed from such Sights, which proved to be but *Imaginations* : And he gave me very suitable Advice, to take care how I too easily embraced such Things for Truth, without a due Trial, and that it was not displeasing to Heaven, to try the Spirit from whence such Things proceeded.

I staid in and about *Bristol* three Weeks, visiting the Meetings round the City, but on First-days I was mostly in the City, and it being the Winter Fair, Meetings were very large : But on the Third-da

Meeting in the Fair Week, there was a Man out of *Wiltshire*, a Separate, named *Arthur Ismead*, who stood up to preach, and was speaking of the Light : He put forth a Question about *bringing our Deeds to the Light* ; adding, *Do I bring my Deeds to the Light ?* A worthy Elder named *Charles Harford*, answer'd, *No, thou dost not : If thou didst, thou wouldst not do as thou dost.* I sat all this Time under a very great Concern, and the Word was in me like Fire ; so I stood up, and with a strong and powerful Voice began to preach, he crying out, *that he had not done* ; but I took no Account of that, but went on, and he soon sat down and fell asleep, and we had a blessed edifying Meeting that Day, and Truth was exalted above Error.

After this Meeting, being clear of the City, I visited some Parts of *Gloucestershire*, *Worcestershire*, *Darbyshire*, *Cheshire* and *Lancashire*, but nothing happened worthy of any great note, save only, in many Places I had very large open quiet Meetings, and when I found myself very high and full, I then expected low Times again, for I but very seldom was drawn forth in Doctrine, and enlarged more than common, but *Maplebeck* would come in my Way, and the uncommon Temptation and Trial I underwent after that Meeting, which did not arrive to its Height until I came to *Swannington* in *Leicestershire*, as is before

* Pag. 13. * hinted.

I reach'd Home about the latter End of the First Month, and staid with my dear Friend *Robert Chambers* part of that Summer, helping him and his Brother-in-Law *John Moore* at *Gale*, mowing more Days this Year than I ever did in one before. *John Bowstead* and *Peter Fearon* having a Meeting appointed for them at a Place called *Goose-green*, between *Kendal* and *Millthrop*, to which Meeting there was a very great Resort ; and being desired to attend it, I did, and in the Beginning of the Meeting I spoke something of the *universal Love of God to Mankind* : After which, a

Friend

Friend went on with the same Subject, and inferred from the Text something more than it would bear, so that a young Man who taught School at *Beatham*, (a small Parish in that Neighbourhood) took him up after the Meeting was over, and having the Advantage of the Argument, did endeavour to bear the Friend down. I was with some others gone to see the Horses got ready for our Return, but being call'd, got with Difficulty into the House, which was much crowded, (the Meeting being held in the open Ground without the House) and when got in and heard them, I soon found where the pinch was; the Friend had said what the Text would not bear him out in, in quoting *Obadiab* the 10th Verse, compared with *Romans* the 9th Chapter and 11th Verse: I observed that he went too far in Expression, when I heard it, and repeating the Words more than twice, the young Man had them very plain. I waited some Time, and then desired Liberty of the young Man to ask him a Question, the answering of which might bring the Argument to a Point; adding, not that I thought myself so capable to maintain that Argument as my Friend was. He gave me Leave, and my Question was, *Whether he believ'd it consistent with divine Wisdom and Mercy, to punish Men for such Faults, as by his Argument they were ordained to be guilty of, which because of that Ordination they could not avoid?* He soon very frankly gave Answer, *He did not believe it.* I then ask'd him, *Why he argued against his own Faith and Judgment?* For although he took Advantage of my Friend's Words, not being so well guarded as they might have been, yet that was no just Ground to argue against his own Judgment. And thus this Argument dropt, and then he took up *Baptism*, but soon finding himself not able to support what he undertook to prove by the Text, viz. *Infant-Baptism*, he confess'd that he was not qualified to maintain his Argument, and therefore requested that we would favour him to confer on that Subject on

Wednesday next, in the Room where he taught School, with the Minister of their Parish ; withal adding, *it might be of Service both to him and others.* My Friends were very much for it, and I was not against it, provided they would go and assist : For I look'd on myself very unequal to such a Task as this was like to be. However, after some Discourse betwixt ourselves, I consented, on Condition that *John Jopson* the School-master of *Kendal* would be my Second, he being well acquainted with, and understanding both the *Greek* and *Latin* Testament, might help me against being imposed upon by any false Gloss or Interpretation put upon the Text to prove their Arguments : So we told the young Man we would endeavour to answer his Request, by being with him on Fourth-day by nine in the Morning ; he was glad to be discharged for the present ; for I had not seen one sweat more freely than he did, being in so very great an Agony, that he could not forbear shaking as he stood by the Table : And thus we parted for this Time very good Friends. But I grew uneasy, fearing how it would end, and blamed my Friends for bringing me into this Scrape, and not assisting in it, but leaving me to dispute with I knew not who ; but all I got was, that they doubted not but I should be assisted to come off well, of which I was very doubtful, and it hinder'd me of some Hours Sleep.

When the Time came, my Friend *John Jopson*, and two more, went with me, we came pretty early, rather before than after the Time appointed ; and the young Man had got his Room, and two Elbow-Chairs ready, for the Parson and myself, but I was not willing to sit in either, being younger than Friend *Jopson* ; but to avoid Words about it, I sat down in one ; the young Man acquainted the Parson we were come, and he came to us, scraping and bowing, and the more we supposed, because he saw we did not answer him in the same Way. After he sat down, previous
to

to what we met about, he would needs have it, *that I challenged a Dispute with him*; to which I could not agree: But referring myself to the young Man, I desired that he would inform his Neighbour of the true Cause of our coming there; which he did very handsomely, to the Effect following, in very decent Language, *viz.* ‘*Sir, Meeting last Sabbath-day with this Gentleman, we fell into a Conference about Infant-Baptism, supposing that I was able from Scripture to prove that Practice; but on Trial, finding myself not able to hold the Argument, shut it up: Therefore being perswaded, and believing you, Sir, to be infinitely more able to defend the Practice of our Church, than I was, I desired this Gentleman to favour me so much, as to come and confer with you, Sir, on this Subject, in my hearing, that I might have this Matter set in a true Light; and I beg your Pardon, Sir, hoping that this modest Request to the Gentleman is not offensive to you, and I will assure you, it is a great Pleasure to me.*’ Thus having made his Apology, the Priest, being a hasty passionate Man, began; *You Quakers are not fit to be disputed with, because that you deny the Scriptures, the Ordinances of Baptism and the Supper of our Lord.*

I address’d myself to the young Man, to inform the Parson that *Infant-Baptism* (so call’d) was the present Point to be consider’d; which he did in a few Words, and very well, but it was to no Purpose: The Priest would go on in his own Way, calling us *Hereticks, Schismatics, Heathens*, and what not, bestowing freely such Reflections upon us as came into his Head; and having gone on in this rambling Way for some Time with his unbecoming Language, I requested, that he would hear me without Interruption as I had him; and then I put him in Mind of his old Age, (he having a comely Personage, and fine white Locks) and that he had more Experience, it might with

Reason be supposed, than we young Men had ; and supposing that thou mayst be right, and that we may be in Error, yet for all this, in my Opinion, thou must be wrong in thy Conduct towards us, in being so liberal to give us hard Names, and shew no Reason for thy doing so. Here I was broke in upon with a kind of Violence, *That all the Disciples and Apostles had a Commission to teach all Nations, baptizing them in the Name of the Father, Son and Holy Ghost.* Do you confute this or own it ? I urged, *No Water* is named in that Text ; and besides, that Text should be render'd, *into the Name of the Father, Son, &c.*

Here the young Man, and my Friend Jopson, search'd both the *Latin* and *Greek*, agreeing that it was more proper to render it *into the Name*, than *in the Name*, &c. Then, if that was right, as it was my Opinion it was, it was plain to me, that the Materials of that Baptism could not be *elementary Water*, therefore I could see nothing in this Text to prove the Practice of *sprinkling* Infants, or *Infant-Baptism*.

Here I was interrupted with great Warmth again : The Parson urging, that *the Disciples, primitive Ministers, and Apostles, all had a Commission in Matthew xxviii. which by Succession was to continue to the End of the World ; and this Baptism was with Water, for the Apostles could not baptize with the Holy Ghost.*

Acts xi. 19.

In Answer I said, When *Peter*, at the House of *Cornelius*, began to speak, (as appears by his own Account) *the Holy Ghost fell on them, as on us at the Beginning*, said *Peter* ; from which it is plain, that Teaching, by Direction of the Spirit, being prior to Baptism, the Baptism of the Holy Ghost was the Consequence of such Teaching. But this not pleasing the Parson, he in Answer said, *That undoubtedly the Commission in Mat. xxviii. was Water, it could be nothing else : What are you wiser than all our Forefathers, who have understood, ever since the first Ministers, this Text to mean no other but Water ? Accordingly*

we have so practised. I queried, if he thought the Text meant outward elementary Water? He said, *he did.* I desired to know his Reason for so believing. He answer'd, *The Practice of the Apostles in pursuance of that Commission which all had.* I then queried, if he thought that *Paul* was included in that Commission? He granted *that he was,* and by *Virtue of his Commission he baptized many.* But I desired they would turn to the Text, *1 Cor. i. 17.* where the Apostle plainly says, *Christ sent him not to baptize, but to preach the Gospel;* and in the foregoing Verses he thanks God, *he baptized no more, &c.* Besides, allowing that they did baptize with (or more properly in) Water, yet this argues nothing in proof of *sprinkling*, nor is there any, either Precept or Precedent for it, in all the Bible. At this the Parson stood up in a Passion, told us we were *no Christians, nor fit to be convers'd with as such,* and left us in a Rage without any Ceremony.

Now the young Man acknowledged, that the Minister (as he stiled him) was not able to defend his own Practice from Scripture, and desired that we would lend him some Books treating on that Subject, and others, in which we differ'd from them and other Dissenters in Point of Religion. We agreed to let him have *William Penn's Key, Robert Barclay's Apology,* and some others, upon applying himself for them to *John Fosson,* his Brother School-master. He was thoroughly convinced, and likely to make a good Man; he had several Enemies, amongst which the Parson was not the least: But he shortly after this sicken'd and died.

And now to return; I was very diligent in following the Harvest Work, both at mowing and reaping, and diligently observing my Gift, to attend such Meetings as I was inclined to; and I found I grew in my Gift, that I could see and discern myself: But then I would check myself for such Thoughts, seeing them by

no means proper to have a Place in my Heart, lest that Humility, which is the Ornament of every Gospel Minister, should be departed from through Self Love and Conceit, by which I might be brought to have a better Opinion of myself than any of my Neighbours had ; which, if given way to, would eat out all that Respect that my Brethren and the Church had for me ; and by this foolish Pride and Conceit, the Hearts of Friends would be shut against me, and I should lose my Place and Interest in them.

Now I had but one Journey more to make into *Scotland*, before my going, (or at least intending to go) into *America*, of which in its Place.

*An ACCOUNT of my JOURNEY into Scotland,
in the WORK of the MINISTRY; begun the 11th
of the Eighth Month 1701.*

I Had for my Companion, in this Journey, a young Man who had a fine Gift, his Name was *Isaac Thompson* : We visited sundry Meetings in our Way to *Carlisle*, finding our Understandings much enlarged in the Openings of divine Truths, and our Service grew upon us, and we went on with Boldness and chearful Minds, meeting in our Way with our dear and worthy Friend *James Dickinson*, who was intending a Visit into *Ireland* : And in our Journey from the Border to *Dumfries*, we had very profitable Conversation of good Service to us both, because we, by reason of Youth, and want of Experience, were often very weak, and doubting whether we were right or not in the Work ; so that this our dear Friend, by his tender and fatherly Care over us, and Advice to us, was of great Encouragement, in letting us know how weak and poor he often found himself ; which so much
answer'd

answer'd my Condition, that it was as Marrow to my Bones. When we came to *Dumfries*, after we had taken some Refreshment at our Inn, *James* said to us, *Lads, I find a Concern to go into the Street, will you go with me?* For he thought it might only be to shew himself, and was desirous that we might go all together, being five in Number; so we walked forth, and the Inhabitants gazed upon us, for the *Quakers* were seldom seen in that Town so many together; and several came after us, and *James* lifted up his Voice like a Trumpet among the People, who were very quiet and attentive. When he was clear, we retired back to our Inn, and divers followed us, who were very rude and wicked, but were not permitted to hurt us. We had sweet Comfort and Refreshment together at our Quarters.

Next Morning we took Leave, and parted, he went for *Port-patrick*, and we visited the Meetings, though very small, until we came to *Hamilton*, where we were finely refreshed with a small Handful of living Friends; and so to *Glasgow*, where the People were rude, but something better than in Times past, not being so uncivil to us in the Streets; thence to *Kinneel*, *Litbgow*, and so over the Water on our Journey Northward, taking *Boroughstowness* and *Ury* in our Way to *Aberdeen* Quarterly-meeting, where we found Friends in a sweet Frame of Spirit, being in dear Unity one with another. We had sundry Meetings with them to our good Satisfaction, and had some other Meetings farther North, as at *Inverary*, *Killmuke*, *Aworthies*, &c. Then back to *Ury* by *Aberdeen*, taking our Journey to *Edinburgh*, visiting the small Meetings, and some other Places we inclined to visit in our Way thither; we had but one little Meeting there, and then went for *Kelfo*, where we staid with them two Meetings on the First-day of the Week, and in the Evening Friends there laid before us the Desire they had for our going to *Jedburgh*, a Towh about
seven

seven Miles from them, and not much out of our Way to *England*.

We consider'd on the Matter, but not the Exercise that might attend us in going thither ; but next Morning we went, and when we came to the Town, (*Samuel Robinson* being our Guide) the Landlord at the Inn would not give us Entertainment ; so we went to another Inn, and the Landlord took us in, withal telling us, how indecently the Minister had rail'd against the *Quakers* the Day before, asserting they were the *Devil's Servants*, and that by his Assistance they did in their Preaching what was done ; with very many vile Words ; but observing one of his Hearers taking what he said in short-hand, he called out, charging him *not to write what he spoke at random against the Quakers* ; with much more to the same Effect. However, we called for some Refreshment, but my Mind was under so much Concern, I could neither eat nor drink : We then called to pay for what we had, and gave the Landlord Charge of our Horses and Bags, whereby he suspected that we were going to preach ; he took me by the Hand, and begg'd that we would not go into the Street, but preach in his House, and he would have his Family together, and they would hear us. I look'd steadily upon the poor Man, who trembled very much, telling him, *We thought it our Place and Duty to preach to the Inhabitants of the Town ; and thinkest thou* (said I to him) *we shall be clear in the Sight of God* (whom we both fear and serve) *by preaching to thee and thy Family, what we are required to preach to the People in the Town ?* The poor Man I found was smitten in himself, and his Countenance alter'd greatly, but he made this Reply ; *Is this the Case, Sir ?* I said it was. Then, said he, go, and God preserve and bless you ; but I fear the Mob will pull down my House for letting you have Entertainment, and kill you for your good Will. I bid him not fear ; for he whom we served was above the Devil, and that
not

not a Hair of our Heads should be hurt without his Permission. He then seemed pacified to let us go, and followed at a Distance to see our Treatment.

The chief Street was very broad, with a considerable Ascent, and near the Head of the Ascent was a Place made to cry Things on, to which we then walked, where we paused a little, but I had nothing to do there at that Time; returning back to the Market-Cross, which was at the Foot of the Hill, for that had an Ascent of three or four Steps, and a Place to sit on at the Top, where we sat down; but we had not sat long before a Man came to us with a Bunch of large Keys in his Hand, and took me by the Hand and said, I must go into the *Tolbooth*, (meaning the Prison) I asked him, *for what?* He said, for Preaching. I told him, *we had not preach'd.* Ay! but quoth he, the Provost (meaning the Mayor) has ordered me to put you in the Tolbooth. *For what?* I again replied. I tell you for Preaching. I told him, *I did not know whether we should preach or not; but it was soon enough to make Prisoners of us when we did preach.* Ay! says he, I ken very weel that you'll preach by your Looks. Thus we argued the matter, he endeavouring to pull me up, and I to keep my Place, and when he found I was not easily moved, he turned to my Companion, who likewise was unwilling to be confined, and then he went to *Samul Robinson*, our Guide, who was easily prevailed on to go, and the easier, for that he had been there but the Week before with two Friends, *viz. John Thompson* and *Thomas Brathwaite*, both of our County of *Westmoreland*.

By this Time we had a large Assembly, and *Samuel Robinson* supposing we should have a better Convenience to preach to them in the Prison, as the Friends afore-named had the Week before, we were conducted thither, just by the Cross where we held the Parly, and put in at the Door: But *Samuel Robinson* soon saw his Mistake, for the Week before the Windows of
the

the Prison were all open, nothing but the Iron Grates in the Way, the Windows being very large for the sake of Air ; but now all were made dark, and strongly fasten'd up with Deals. We had been but a short Time there, before a Messenger came to offer us Liberty, on Condition we would depart the Town without preaching ; but we could make no such Agreement with them, and so we told the Messenger. A little after he was gone, I wrote the following Lines to the Provost.

‘ **I** T is in my Mind to write these few Lines to thee,
 ‘ the Provost of this Town of *Yedburgh*, to let thee
 ‘ understand that our coming within thy Liberties,
 ‘ is not to disturb the Peace of your Town, nor to
 ‘ preach false Doctrine or Heresy (as is by your
 ‘ Teachers maliciously suggested, whose Interest it is,
 ‘ as they suppose, to make the People believe it) but in
 ‘ Obedience to our Lord Jesus Christ, whose Servants
 ‘ we are, for he hath bought us with his most precious
 ‘ Blood ; and we are no more our own, but his that
 ‘ has bought us, whose Power is an unlimited Power,
 ‘ and all Power is limited by him, so his Power is not
 ‘ to be limited by any other Power ; therefore we his
 ‘ Servants dare not limit ourselves, or promise any
 ‘ Man we will do this, or we will do that, but com-
 ‘ mit our Cause to him as his (the Lord’s) Servants
 ‘ did of old, knowing, that if we please him he can
 ‘ deliver us, but if not, we can make no Promise to
 ‘ any Man on this Account, because we ourselves
 ‘ know not what he has for us to do ; and therefore
 ‘ we endeavour to stand clear from all Engagements,
 ‘ ready to do what he requires at our Hands. But I
 ‘ must tell thee, that the Manner of our Imprison-
 ‘ ment looks very rigid and uncommon in these
 ‘ Times of Liberty, so far below a *Christian*, that
 ‘ ’tis hardly humane, that we should be here detain-
 ‘ ed as Evil-doers, before we are examined, or any
 ‘ Breach

* Breach of Law appears against us. Doth your *Scotch*
 * *Law* judge a Man before it hears him? if so, 'tis
 * very unjust indeed, and looks very hard, that the
 * King's Subjects may not have the Liberty to walk in
 * your Streets as elsewhere, which was all we did, be-
 * sides sitting down on the Market Cross in a thought-
 * ful Sense of our Duty to God, not opening our
 * Mouths but to him that violently forced us into
 * Confinement; nor do we know that we should have
 * spoken to the People in a Way of Preaching at all:
 * But that is the Work of our Master, and we must
 * wait his Will and Time, to know both when and
 * how to do it; therefore if thou thinkest to keep us
 * until we promise thee or any of thy Officers not to
 * preach in your Streets, it will be long that we must
 * abide here: Therefore I desire thee to take the
 * Matter into a *Christian* Consideration, to do as thou
 * wouldst be done unto, and give thyself Liberty to
 * think for what End the Magistrates Sword is put into
 * thy Hand, that thou mayst use it right, lest thou
 * shouldst be found one of those that turns Justice
 * backwards, so that Equity cannot enter. This is
 * from one that wisheth thy Welfare and Salvation,

Jedburgh Tolbooth, the 18th
 of the Ninth Month 1701.

'SAMUEL BOWNAS.'

When I had writ this, it was very hard to per-
 fwade any one to carry it to the Povost, for now
 they were so affrighted about having any Thing to say
 or do with us, that they durst not appear to talk with
 us; and whether he had it or not, I cannot be certain.

The next Day there was a Country Gentleman who
 came into the Town, and he sent his Servant to invite
 us to his House; to which we replied, *We knew not yet,*
when we should have our Liberty; but desired our Thanks
might be returned to his Master, for that kind Invitation:
 He replied, we should soon be at Liberty, for his
 Master

Master was gone to the Provost ; knowing they had no Pretence to keep us there. Accordingly in less than two Hours after, we were set at Liberty, and went to our Inn to refresh ourselves.

The Town was very full of Country People, it being Market-day, and we went to the Market Cross, which was so much surrounded with People selling their Ware, that there was no Room for us, without great Damage to them : We therefore, after a short Pause, walked up the Street to the Place before named, and the Street and Balconies being filled with People, with the Sashes and Casements open, and crowded with Spectators, some computing the Number to be above Five Thousand, but such Guesses at Numbers are uncertain : But however there I stood up, (being above the People, both by the Advantage of the Ground, and the Place whereon I stood) and opened my Mouth, being full of the Power and Spirit of Grace, saying, ‘ Fear the Lord and keep his Com-
 ‘ mandments, who by his Servant said, *I will put*
 ‘ *my Laws in their Minds, and write them in their*
 ‘ *Hearts ; and I will be to them a God, and they shall*
 ‘ *be to me a People.* Now if you be obedient to this
 ‘ Law, you will do well, and thereby become the
 ‘ People of God ; but if disobedient, you will lie
 ‘ under his Wrath and Judgments.’ With more, distinguishing between the Happiness of those who obeyed, and the Unhappiness of the Disobedient.

I stepped down, in Expectation that my Companion might say somewhat, but he was willing to be gone : I then was concerned to step up again, and kneeling down, was fervently drawn forth in Prayer ; but after I had begun, two Men came and took me by the Arms, and led me down the Street praying, and by the Time we came at the Foot of the Ascent, I had done praying : After which I took a View of the People, who shewed great Respect indeed, but I was conveyed to the Prison Door, where was a Sentry of two Soldiers,
 who

who stood by and heard what I said to the Officers who brought me there, which was to this Effect :
 ' That the Day before I was forced in there against
 ' my Will, and contrary to Law, but that I would not
 ' now go there again, without first being examined by
 ' the Provost, or by their Priest and Elders of their
 ' Church, or other chief Officers in the Town, and if
 ' then any Thing did appear that I had broken any
 ' Law, or done ought worthy of Imprisonment,
 ' having a *Mittimus* setting forth my Crime, I would
 ' willingly suffer, and not refuse going ; but with-
 ' out such an Examination I refused to go there again,
 ' unless forced to it by Violence, and that, I hoped
 ' they would not be guilty of.' At which one of
 the Soldiers, taking his Musket by the small End,
 advancing the Butt, said, *His Countryman had spoken
 right, and what he said was according to Law and
 Justice, and ought to be observed as such ; and therefore
 if you will (said he) take him before the Provost in
 order for Examination, you may ; but if not, touch him
 that dare.*

At this bold Attempt and Speech they both left
 me, and I was advanced above the People about six
 or seven Steps, and turning about to them, there
 being a little Square before the Door, surrounded
 with the Guard Chamber on one Side, the Tolbooth
 on the other, and a Wall facing the Street about four
 Feet high, I had a very good Opportunity to speak
 to them, which I did, about a Quarter or near Half
 an Hour, and they were very quiet and civil. When
 I had done, and acknowledged the Soldier's Kindness
 and Civility towards me, who said, *It was his Duty to
 do it*, I came down the Steps, the People crowding
 very close to see as well as hear me, but they divided
 soon, making a Lane for my Passage, shewing me
 considerable Respect in their Way : Some said, *You
 have dung them, Sir, you have dung them, Sir ;* mean-
 ing thereby I had got the Victory. All was very quiet,
 save

save that one or more would have forced a Horse over us, but was prevented by the rest ; not the least Unhandsomeness appeared, save *that* amongst them. Retiring to our Inn I was full of Peace and Comfort.

By this Time the Day was far spent, and concluding to stay that Night, we order'd some Refreshment to be got for us, for I found myself in want of it : It was soon got ready, and we invited our Host to share with us, who willingly did, shewing his good liking to what had been said ; adding, he never saw the People so struck, and give so good Attention ; nor ever did he see so large a Multitude, who heard all so intelligibly down to the very Foot of the Hill, which was, as he supposed, not much less than two Hundred Yards in length ; and I took, by Computation, the Street to be upwards of thirty Yards wide, and all that Space much crowded. I gave him a hint of his Fear, putting him in mind that our Duty, in preaching to that Multitude, could not possibly have been discharged by preaching to him and his Family, and he acknowledged it was right in us to do as we did.

By this Time the Evening closed in, and sundry Gentlemen sent Word that they would gladly pay us a Visit, if we would permit it, and the Landlord, I saw, earnestly desired that we would, and he had a very large Room ; into which we went, and they soon came to us, and quickly fell into Conversation ; for they are very full of Talk about Religion, and very tenacious in their Opinions upon it.

The first Article of Dispute was, about *the Rule of Faith and Practice* ; and this was argued (*pro* and *con*) between them and our Guide *Samuel Robinson*, near Half an Hour, who was a very sensible religious young Man, and had a good Share of Learning also ; but I found they made nothing of it. Our Opponents would endeavour, in their Way, to make out the *Scriptures* to be the only Rule of Faith, and that the
Spirit

Spirit we professed to be guided by, must be subordinate to the Text. I hitherto had said nothing, but now desiring a few Words by way of Question, the answering of which might bring this Dispute to a Point; *I thought not*, said I, *that I should take the Argument from my Friend Robinson, whom I take to be more capable to support it than I am.* All were very willing to hear me; then I began to state the Difference between us, thus; *We all agree*, said I, *that the Scriptures is a Rule of Faith and Practice: Do we not?* this was granted. *The Difference lies here then, if I take it right, we say it is a Rule; you say, it is the only Rule; this is the Point in Dispute, is it not?* this was likewise granted me. Then I proceeded thus; *allowing what you say to be true, it must be consider'd, that all instrumental Rules are made, whether they relate to spiritual or temporal Affairs, and must be contrived and adapted to answer the End for which they are made.* This was allowed also. *And as the Text is a Rule made, contriv'd and adapted for spiritual Affairs, Who made it so? since the Text could not make itself.* Here was a long Pause; at last one replied, *Holy Men writ as they were moved by the Holy Ghost.* Here was a Pause again; *And*, said I, *is this your Mind?* It is the plain Words of the Text, said another: *Granting this; then it must by your Accession be allowed, that the Spirit gave forth or made the Scriptures, by the Medium of holy Men; therefore the Spirit gave forth the Text: Now judge you, whether a Rule made, or the Author that made that Rule, be subordinate?* There was a Pause for a little while, and one of the Company said, *You are dung, you are dung,* (meaning they had lost the Victory) *the Scriptures must be subordinate to the Spirit that gave them forth.* I reply'd thus; *We believe concerning the Text, that it is a Rule, and the best external Rule we have; but that the Spirit, which gave it us by the Medium of holy Men, is the principal Rule of Faith and Practice.*

D

Thus

Thus this Debate ended, and they started another about *Baptism* ; but that was soon terminated. Our Friend *Robinson* was an over Match' for them by far, about it. Then they had a few Words concerning the *Bread* and *Wine* : That held but little Time, for they allowed these Ceremonies to be *external* Parts of Religion. Then they came to *Preaching*, and stated the Question thus ; *Our own Teachers, we know how they come by their Ministry, and by what Authority they preach* : (meaning their Learning, and the laying on of the Hands, as they term it, of the Presbytery at their Ordination, &c.) *But we want to know, how your Preachers come by their Ministry ? And by what Authority they preach ?* Here, our Friend reasoned with them some Time, but they either could not, or would not be convinced by his Words ; so he told the Company plainly, *That he never did preach, and therefore would leave it to them that did, to give Account how they came by it themselves.*

I was, all the Time that they banded this Affair, under a great Concern, fearing how we might come off ; but when *Samuel Robinson* had laid the Matter so justly and fairly at our Door, there was so considerable a Space of Silence, that they expected nothing from us, but began other Discourse, until I could no longer with-hold ; and bespeaking their Silence and Attention, was willing to relate to them, *how I came by my Ministry* ; at which, they all listen'd with close Attention. Then I premised thus, as an Introduction before I came to the Matter itself ; *Although in the Tbread of my Discourse, something might appear liable to an Objection, I intreated the Favour of them all to bear me out, by reason that what I might say afterwards would perhaps solve their Objections, without giving me or themselves any Interruption.* Which, with one Voice, they all assented to, that it was a reasonable and just Request. Then I proceeded as follows :

• My

' My Father was a *Cordwainer*, that lived by his
 ' small Trade of making Shoes, who died before I was
 ' a Month old, and left my Mother a small Patrimony
 ' to live on, of about four Pounds a Year, to keep
 ' herself, me, and one Son more, who was about
 ' seven Years old when my Father died. My Mother
 ' gave me a religious Education in this same Way.
 ' When I was fit to go to School, I was sent thither,
 ' until I was ten or eleven Years old, and then was
 ' taken from School and put to keep Sheep: My
 ' Earnings, though very small, giving some Assistance
 ' to my Mother, who had bound my Brother an
 ' Apprentice; but I was kept close to attend the
 ' Flock when wanted, and afterwards put an Appren-
 ' tice to a *Blacksmith*, still going to our own Meetings,
 ' but did not understand the Rudiments of that Reli-
 ' gion I was trained up in, but was addicted to the
 ' Pleasures of the Times; and when I went to Meet-
 ' ing, knew not how to employ my Thoughts, and
 ' often, yea, very often, the greatest Part of the
 ' Meeting (for want of a proper Employment of
 ' Thought) I spent in sleeping; for the Preaching
 ' (which was pretty much) was what I did not under-
 ' stand: Thus two or three Years of my Appren-
 ' ticeship I spent with very little Sense of God or
 ' Religion.

' But so it fell out, that a young Woman came to
 ' visit our Meeting, and in her Preaching, seemed to
 ' direct her Words to me, which were these, or to
 ' the same Effect: *A traditional Quaker, thou goes*
 ' *from the Meeting as thou came to it; and thou comes*
 ' *to it as thou went from it, having no Profit by doing*
 ' *so; but what wilt thou do in the End thereof?* These
 ' Words were so pat to my then State, that I was
 ' pricked to the very Heart, crying out in secret,
 ' *Lord! How shall I do to mend it? I would willingly*
 ' *do it if I knew how.* A Voice in my Breast replied,
 ' *Look unto me, and thou shalt find Help.*

Luke xvii.
21.

‘ From that Time forward I found it true, that
 ‘ what is to be known of God and true Religion, is
 ‘ revealed *within* ; and relying on the Lord, who
 ‘ began thus to reveal his Power in me, and let me see
 ‘ that I must depend on him for Strength and Salva-
 ‘ tion, the Scriptures seemed to be unsealed, and made
 ‘ clear to my Understanding ; such as, *being born from*
 ‘ *above* ; and that which is to be *known* of God, is
 ‘ made *manifest in us* ; and also that Text which says,
 ‘ *The Kingdom of God is within.* The Lord opened
 ‘ my Understanding by his Spirit, to see the proper
 ‘ Qualification and Call of true Ministers, that it was
 ‘ not external but *internal*, and the Heart must first
 ‘ be *sanctified*, before the divine Anointing could be
 ‘ expected.

‘ Thus for some Time I went on in my religious
 ‘ Duties with great Success, and I found I gained
 ‘ much in spiritual and divine Knowledge : And as I
 ‘ was going to Meeting on that Day commonly called
 ‘ *Sunday*, it came into my Mind, that if I was watch-
 ‘ ful and obedient, carefully minding to keep my
 ‘ Place, and to that Guide I was now acquainted
 ‘ with, I should be made a *Teacher of others* : I pro-
 ‘ ceeded on my Way to Meeting, and being sat down
 ‘ therein, in a short Time I felt the Power of the
 ‘ Spirit strong upon me, *to speak a few Sentences* : But
 ‘ oh ! the Reasoning and Excuses that I formed in
 ‘ my weak Mind, that I might be spared from this
 ‘ Work some Time longer ; and the Weight seemed
 ‘ to be taken from me for that Time. But oh ! the
 ‘ Trouble and Uneasiness which I afterwards went
 ‘ through, made me enter into Covenant, that if ever
 ‘ the like Offer was made me, I would give up to the
 ‘ *heavenly Vision*.

‘ The Trouble of my Mind affected my Countenance
 ‘ so much, that it gave my Master (being of the same
 ‘ Way) Reason to examine me, *how it was* ? I gave
 ‘ him a candid Account, withal adding, my Fear that
 ‘ my

' my Offence was so great, I should be *rejected* as a
 ' Cast-away : But he comforted me, with urging
 ' various Examples of the like kind, for my Encou-
 ' ragement, no way doubting, but that at the next
 ' Meeting the same Concern would come upon me,
 ' and to which he advised me to *give up* ; with a
 ' sympathizing Spirit of Love, in various and com-
 ' fortable Exhortations confirmed by Scripture Ex-
 ' amples : And as he had said, the next Meeting,
 ' before I had sat there an Hour and a Half, the
 ' same Concern came upon me, which was this ; (and
 ' I had now to deliver the same Words with the
 ' same Authority as I did when in that Meeting)
 ' *Fear not them which kill the Body, but are not able to*
 ' *kill the Soul : But rather fear him who is able to destroy*
 ' *both Body and Soul in Hell.* I say, *fear you him who*
 ' *will terribly shake the Earth, that all which is moveable*
 ' *may be shaken and removed out of the Way ; and that*
 ' *which is immoveable may stand.* This was the first
 ' Appearance, in the Words abovesaid, that I made in
 ' publick as *a Preacher.*'

By this Time I found, that the Power of the Gospel
 was over them, by their wiping of their Eyes, and I
 was assisted to go on with Strength of Argument and
 Demonstration, further adding, ' That then I had
 ' near three Years of my Time to serve, which I
 ' did with great Faithfulness to my Master ; and
 ' before the Time was expired, preaching a little at
 ' Times, but not very frequently, yet to the great
 ' Satisfaction of my Brethren, I found a Concern upon
 ' me to travel abroad as *a Minister* ; and I acquainted
 ' my Master therewith, who had been as a Father to
 ' me : He told me, Before I went on that Errand I
 ' must acquaint the Elders therewith, and lay it
 ' before the Monthly-meeting.' (Here I enlarged on
 the peculiar End of those Meetings, setting forth the
 Service thereof, to take Care of our Poor, and to
 deal with Offenders who were a Scandal by their ill

Conduct to their Profession, and sundry other Matters cognisable in those Meetings) ‘ that they might judge
 ‘ *whether my Concern was right*, and give me a Letter
 ‘ of Recommendation or Certificate, to signify their
 ‘ Unity and Satisfaction therein : Which I did accordingly, and with some very suitable Advice to
 ‘ my then present Infant State as a Minister, they
 ‘ gave me a Certificate or a Letter of Recommendation, and sign’d it in the Meeting, as is usual
 ‘ in such Cases : I accomplished that Journey, and
 ‘ was, at my Return, call’d upon to give Account
 ‘ thereof, and to deliver up my Certificate.

‘ After which, in a short Time, I had another
 ‘ Journey before me, and by our Discipline, or
 ‘ Church Government, was obliged to go to the same
 ‘ Meeting for a fresh Certificate, which was readily
 ‘ granted ; and the Brethren rejoiced at my Improvement, advising me to *render the Honour thereof*
 ‘ *where due*. At my Return, I was obliged to attend
 ‘ the said Meeting, and give Account of my Travels
 ‘ as before : This Practice amongst us is judged need-
 ‘ ful, lest any one should swerve from their first
 ‘ Foundation, and undertake to preach without a
 ‘ *right* Commission, and so impose upon our Friends
 ‘ who know them not.

‘ In a little Time I was concerned to take another
 ‘ Journey, and laid before the said Meeting my Concern as abovesaid, and had a Certificate. At my
 ‘ Return I gave Account as before, and deliver’d my
 ‘ Certificate : After which, I had another Concern to
 ‘ visit this Nation in this very Journey, and laid my
 ‘ Concern before the said Meeting, had a Certificate
 ‘ readily granted me (and pulling it out of my Pocket-
 ‘ book said) and *there it is*.’ At which, one of them
 ‘ took it, and, at the Desire of the rest, read it up ;
 ‘ and it was returned to me with a profound Silence :
 ‘ So I proceeded to add, ‘ that I had visited all that
 ‘ Kingdom, where I found Drawings in my Spirit to
 ‘ go,

‘ go, and this (so far as I yet see) is the last Place :
‘ And now I must leave you to judge, whether it’s
‘ not reasonable for you to conclude, at least that I
‘ think myself concerned by an almighty Power, else
‘ how could I have expos’d myself to such an unruly
‘ Mob as I have preached to this Day ?’

Here I stopt ; and one in the Company asked, *If all
our Preachers came by their Ministry this same Way ?*
To which I replied, ‘ I could not give Account how
‘ another Man might receive his Ministry, but I have
‘ given you a faithful and candid Account how I
‘ receiv’d mine.’

Here my Companion was full of Matter to relate,
by giving them an Account how he came by his
Ministry, but let in a Fear, that what he might add,
would hurt the Cause. One of the Company said,
It’s enough what we have heard, and so he was very
handsomely excused.

The Night (by the Time this was over) being far
spent, it being some Time past the Middle, a Reckon-
ing was call’d, and they wou’d not allow us to pay
any Part thereof, but took leave of us with great
Affection ; and the Country Gentleman, that was
assisting to our Liberty, gave us a very kind Invitation
to his House, which we receiv’d very thankfully ;
but being engag’d in our Minds for *England*, had not
Freedom to go with him : So we parted in a very
loving and friendly manner.

We being now left to ourselves, I had an Oppor-
tunity to reflect on what had pass’d, and to examine
my whole Conduct all that Day ; a Practice I
frequently used, after a more than common Day’s
Service ; and indeed after every Opportunity of an
Enlargement in my Gift, by Experience finding the
best Instructor in my own Bosom, to shew where
I hit the Matter or miss’d it : And considering why
I began *so low as my Father*, setting forth my Manner
of Education and Trade, which seem’d to have no

Relation to my Call to the Ministry, I saw the Reason thereof, and found it to be this, That they might not think my Ministry to have, in the least, any Dependance upon *Literature*; a Qualification much depended on for the Work of the Ministry amongst them, and some of them will not take any Notice of any other Sort; if a Man (for they will not admit a Woman to have any Part in this Work) be he never so divinely fitted by the Spirit, yet if he want human Learning, it's all nothing with them. Thus the Wisdom of Truth, which I did not see so plainly at first, appeared to my Understanding very clearly: And on a close and narrow Inspection into this Day's Work, I found inward Peace, a Joy spring in my Heart that I could not set forth by Words. And my Companion had more Ease and true Content than I thought he could have, by reason of his not coming up in his Service, to let the Company know how he came by his Ministry, and by what Authority he preached.

I have been more particular in the Relation of this Day's Work than I otherwise should have been, as containing in it such signal Marks of Providence; *first*, That we should be detained in hold, just till the People from the Country were come in. *Secondly*, and then set at Liberty to say what the Lord gave us. And *Thirdly*, That we had so seasonable an Opportunity to explain our Practice as to the *Ministers*, viz. the Conduct of the Society towards them; and likewise the Service of our Monthly-meetings respecting the *Poor*, *Marriages*, admonishing *Offenders*, making up *Differences*, granting of *Certificates* to such as saw Cause to remove themselves from one Monthly-meeting to another, as well as to Ministers. Which, by their shewing so much Kindness, and raising no Objection to any Thing said on these Heads, did plainly demonstrate their good liking and Satisfaction therewith.

The next Morning we set out for *England*, and by the Evening got amongst Friends in the Border,
within

within the Compass of *Sowport* Meeting, and had some few Meetings, as at the *Border*, *Scotby*, *Carlisle*, and some other Places. I came to my old Master *Samuel Parrot's*, having no Place to retire to as a Home, but sometimes I was at *Sedgwick*, and sometimes quarter'd with my Friend *Robert Chambers*, and sometimes at *Kendal*, and at *Gatefide*, at honest *William Simpson's*, where I did sometimes help them in their Business, he being a *Blacksmith*. But I was now preparing myself for a Journey into *America*, and was near ready : And I had an Opportunity to take my Leave of the neighbouring Meetings, as *Dent*, *Garfdale*, *Sedberg*, *Grayrigg*, *Kendal*, *Preston*, with divers other neighbouring Meetings thereabouts ; but that at *Preston* was the most memorable and solid, the Sense whereof continued with me all over *America*, at Times ; I went thence to *Yelland*, and many Friends came to that Meeting from divers Places to take Leave of me, so that it was a very large and living Meeting ; and I parted with my Brethren in great Love and Unity. I then came by *Wray*, *Bentham*, *Settle*, and to *Airton*, where that great and good Man *William Ellis*, being then living and full of Power, having great and solid Experience concerning the Work of the Ministry, was very edifying to me, by the wholesome Counsel he gave. *James Wilson* was then with me, who was not at that Time a publick Minister, yet of great Service in visiting Families, being closely engaged in Spirit for the maintaining good Order and Discipline ; and we being both very young in these Things, this worthy Friend gave such Advice to us both, with respect to a faithful coming up in our Services, that we could with good Reason say, that his Words *were like Apples of Gold in Pictures of Silver* ; for a long Time after, the Sense and Virtue of them dwelt on my Mind, to my great Advantage. We stayed with him one Night, and had a small Meeting, in which the Preference and Value I had for him, together with

with an Awe that was on my Spirit concerning his great Services and Experience as a Minister, took such place in my Mind, *that I was silent before him.*

Next Day we took our Leave, and he brought us on our Way a little, heartily praying at parting, that *I might be preserved in my Place, and return with Safety.*

James Wilson came with me as far as Leeds, and then we parted, and I went through Nottinghamshire and Leicestershire, visiting sundry Meetings, (where some Time before I had met with great Trials and Afflictions in Mind, as is already hinted) and some were convinced: My Mind was strongly engaged to see them in my Way, and I had good Satisfaction in that Visit.

Having done this, I went by the Way of Hitching and Hertford, visiting sundry Meetings, finding Encouragement to go on: But I still expected that I should be stopt by the Morning-meeting, for want of a Companion. I came to London the latter End of the Tenth Month 1701, being by Letters advised, the Ships would sail in a Week's Time, or very shortly; but a War breaking out between England and France, an Embargo was laid on all Shipping for two Months, so that there was no Expectation of getting off. I staid in London about three Weeks, visiting all the Meetings in and about the City, which gave the Brethren a thorough Taste of my Service; some of my best Friends advising, that I should not lay my Concern before the Meeting, that I designed for America, until the General or Monthly-meeting of Ministers did come round, and in that Time my Service as a Minister would be generally known. I readily complied; and when the Time came, I went in great Fear to lay my Concern before that Meeting, being still apprehensive I should not be permitted to proceed, for want of a suitable Companion; but as no Objection did arise, they perused the Certificates that I had from the Monthly and Quarterly-meetings, and did well approve

approve thereof ; and a Minute was made, appointing some Friends to prepare a Certificate against the next Meeting ; which was accordingly done, brought there, and signed.

All Things now being clear for my going the first Opportunity, it was thought proper to see for a Ship, which by the Assistance of some Friends was done, but no likelihood of going quickly, by reason of the Embargo.

I had some Desire to visit the West, in particular *Dorset, Somerset, Bristol, and Wilts*, but at a Loss for a Horse, having sold my own soon after I came to *London* ; but the Friend to whom I sold him, offered that I should have him that Journey, which I accepted, and so set out, having in Company a young Man that had been bred at a College, his Name was *Samuel Crisp*, a pretty meek spirited Youth, and rightly convinced. When we got forty or fifty Miles from *London*, he had strong Inclinations to go back. I made a kind of a running Visit ; and when I was at *Bristol*, my Friends there were exceeding kind, and would willingly have had me gone from thence ; but my prior Engagement at *London* would not permit it.

I staid there two Weeks at least, and taking my Leave, sundry Friends brought me on my Way to *Bath, Bradford, &c.* They returned, and I went on for *London*, and quartering at an Inn at *Hungerford*, (not being easy to take any more Meetings till I came to the City) I fell in Company with a couple of Tradesmen, who, when we sat down to Supper, complimented each other about which should *crave a Blessing*, at last they pull'd off their Hats, and one of them did it in some sort ; but my sitting with my Hat on was such an Offence, that they began to reprove me very sharply : I said but very little for some Time, until they had spent their Reproach upon me, and then I spoke to this Effect, ' That the Appearance ' they made, just before Supper was brought to the ' Table,

‘ Table, was so very void of Grace in their Hearts,
 ‘ that I could not think it my Place to pull off my
 ‘ Hat to their formal Prayer: And besides, as soon
 ‘ as the Words were out of their Mouths and over, it
 ‘ appeared to me that they were the same, and I saw
 ‘ by their Conduct that they did not understand the
 ‘ Nature of *true Prayer*, which is to be performed
 ‘ both with the Spirit and Understanding; and if
 ‘ you had not wanted both, you could not pass such
 ‘ silly Compliments on each other about it.’ I was
 now very quiet, and they said no more to me. But
 as soon as Supper was over, and the Reckoning paid,
 they left me with free Consent, for our Company
 was unsuitable.

Next Day I went towards *London* by *Newbury*,
 where I stopt at a Funeral, and so to *Reading*, and
 by *Maidenhead* to the City, but found the Embargo
 not yet taken off. It being now pretty near the
 Middle of the First Month, I visited some Parts of
Hertfordshire, having my dear Friend *John Tompkins*
 part of the Time, and *Samuel Crisp*, who was a sweet
 Companion, having received the Knowledge of the
 Truth the right Way.

About a Week or two in the Second Month, Orders
 were given for the Merchants to get ready, and a
 Convoy was to go with them: But for all this, it
 was the latter End of the Third Month before we
 got off; so I had an Opportunity to visit the greatest
 Part of *Kent*. And after we sailed from the *Downs*,
 we were put into *Portsmouth* Harbour by contrary
 Winds, and lay there two or three Weeks, which was
 very tiresome. But all this Time I never considered
 any Danger of being taken by the *French*; it did
 not so much as enter into my Mind, until I came
 into *Philadelphia*, where hearing that *Thomas Story*,
Richard Groves, and others, were taken some Time
 before, and carried into *Martinico*, a *French* Island, I
 thought of it more closely.

I left

I left *England* in the Third Month 1702, about the Time of the Yearly-meeting, with inward Satisfaction and Peace of Mind, and wrote a few Lines to be sent to the Meeting of Ministers in *Kendal*, or elsewhere, in *Westmoreland*, my native Place; which I here insert, being the first Fruits of that kind to my Brethren.

‘ To the MEETING of MINISTERS at *Kendal*
‘ in *Westmoreland*. *These*.

‘ *My dearly beloved Brethren and Sisters,*

‘ **I**N that Love which in Time past we have enjoyed
‘ together, do I heartily salute you, having in
‘ mind some few Things to impart, as Counsel and
‘ Caution to us all, including myself therein.

‘ We who apprehend ourselves called into this
‘ publick Station of Preaching, ought closely to wait
‘ on our Guide, to put us forth in the Work. And
‘ *dear Friends*, I see great Need for us carefully to
‘ mind our Openings, and go on as we are led by the
‘ Spirit; for if we over-run our Guide and Openings,
‘ we shall be confused, not knowing where, or how
‘ to conclude: But if we begin and go on with the
‘ Spirit we shall conclude so, and all who are truly
‘ spiritual will sensibly feel that we are right: Thus
‘ will our Ministry edify those who hear it.

‘ And *dear Friends*, let us be singly and in Sincerity
‘ devoted to the Will of God, whether to preach or
‘ to be silent; for if we are not sensible of such a Re-
‘ signation, it is doubtful, that we may set ourselves
‘ at work, when we should be quiet, and so bring an
‘ Uneasiness upon our Friends, and a Burthen upon
‘ ourselves: And this Conduct will shut up Friends
‘ Hearts against our Service and Ministry. And *my*
‘ *dear Friends*, every Time you appear in the Ministry,
‘ when it is over, examine yourselves narrowly, whe-
‘ ther you have kept in your Places, and to your
‘ Guide;

‘ Guide ; and consider, whether you have not used
 ‘ superfluous Words, that render the Matter disagree-
 ‘ able, or such Tones or Gestures as misbecome the
 ‘ Work we are about, always remembring, that the
 ‘ *true Ministers preach not themselves, but Christ Jesus*
 ‘ *our Lord.* Let us bear this in mind, that neither
 ‘ Arts, Parts, Strength of Memory, nor former Ex-
 ‘ periences will, without the Sanctification of the
 ‘ Spirit, do any Thing for us to depend upon. Let
 ‘ us therefore, I entreat you, keep to the living
 ‘ Fountain, the Spring of eternal Life, opened by
 ‘ our Lord Jesus Christ in our Hearts.

‘ I also desire, that you would not neglect your
 ‘ Day’s Work, in visiting the dark Corners of the
 ‘ Counties about you ; but be mindful of your Service
 ‘ therein, as the Lord shall make Way for it.

‘ The Things above written have been on my
 ‘ Mind to communicate to you, *my dear Friends*, with
 ‘ Desires that the God and Father of our Lord Jesus
 ‘ Christ may be with your Spirits, *Amen.* Hoping
 ‘ also, that I shall not be forgotten by you, in your
 ‘ nearest Approaches to the Throne of Grace, in
 ‘ your Supplications to the God of the Spirits of all
 ‘ Flesh ; remembring me, that I may be preserved
 ‘ by Sea, and in the Wilderness, through the many
 ‘ and various Exercises and Baptisms, that I may be
 ‘ suffered to undergo for the Service’s Sake ; and that
 ‘ I may be preserved in Humility and Self-denial,
 ‘ under the Power of the Cross, the most beautiful
 ‘ Ornaments a Minister can ever be cloathed with ;
 ‘ that if it please him we should meet again, our Joy
 ‘ may then be full in the Holy Ghost, which is the
 ‘ fervent Prayer of your exercised Friend and Brother,

‘ SAMUEL BOWNAS.’

This was written in the Second Month 1702, and
 left with my Friend *John Tompkins*, not to send it
 until he heard I was gone off. *An*

*An ACCOUNT of my TRAVELS in America,
the first Time.*

AS advised by Friends appointed to assist me, I took my Passage on board the *Josiah*, *John Sowden* Master, bound for *West-River* in *Maryland*, and we left *England* about the 24th of the Third Month 1702, and landed in the River of *Potuxant* in *Maryland*, about the 29th of the Fifth Month following.

I visited some Meetings in that Province; but *George Keith* being there, and challenging Disputes wherever he came, gave both me and Friends some Exercise: To me, by challenging a Dispute without my previous Knowledge, in the following Terms.

‘ To the PREACHER lately arrived from England.

‘ S I R,

‘ I intend to give Notice after Sermon, that you
‘ and myself are to dispute To-morrow, and would
‘ have you give Notice thereof accordingly.

‘ Sir, I am your humble Servant,

Dated the 1st Sunday
in August, 1702.

‘ GEO. KEITH.’

He writ this on Occasion of an honest Friend’s speaking sharply to him, and giving him the Title of an *Apostate*; adding, she could not pretend to dispute with him, but a Friend that was to be at their Meeting on First-day next, (meaning me) she did not doubt would talk with him. *Well then*, said *Keith*, next Monday let him come, and I will prove him, and all the Quakers, unsound in both Faith and Principle. With
more

more of that kind. The honest Woman being warm, and zealous for the Cause, replied, *He will not be afraid of thee, I'm sure.*

The Messenger that brought the Letter, delivered it in haste, as he was ordered, to *John Faulkner*, a young Man from *Scotland*, who was then Store-keeper in *Benjamin Brains* and Company's Employ. We were just then a considerable Number of us in Company, going to a Meeting at *Chester* in the Woods, some Distance from any House, and *John* insisted for me to write an Answer, adding, *Keith would call the Country together, and make much Noise about it, as if we were afraid, &c. and 'twas best to nip his Expectation in the Bud.* And as we knew nothing of the Conference *Keith* had with the Woman Friend two Days before, I writ to the Effect following.

‘ GEORGE KEITH,

‘ **I** Have received thine, and think myself no way
 ‘ obliged to take any Notice of one that hath been
 ‘ so very mutable in his Pretences to Religion ; besides,
 ‘ as thou hast long since been disowned, after due
 ‘ Admonition given thee by our Yearly-meeting in
 ‘ *London*, for thy quarrelsome and irregular Practices,
 ‘ thou art not worthy of my Notice, being no more
 ‘ to me than a Heathen Man and a Publican ; is the
 ‘ needful from

‘ SAMUEL BOWNAS.’

Being dated the same Day.

John Faulkner carried my Answer, and we went to our Meeting, being at *Chester* in *Maryland*, as afore-said : By that Time the Meeting was fully gathered, *John Faulkner* came back, and we had a comfortable Meeting : Afterwards *John Faulkner* told us, *George Keith* read my Letter publickly amongst his Company, appearing very angry at the Contents of it ; and the
 Company

Company laughed very heartily, many of them being much pleased with it: But *J. Faulkner* came out of the Company, and a substantial Planter followed him, and told him, he had much rather go with him to our Meeting, than to hear *George Keith* rail and abuse the *Quakers*; but he, being in the Commission of the Peace, must (as *Keith* was recommended by the Bishop of London) shew some Respect; withal adding, that *John Faulkner* should bring me to his House to dine the next Day; which *John Faulkner* would have excused, urging, that as they had a Value for me, sundry Friends would be for bringing me on my Way farther; adding, we should incommode his House. He urged it the more, saying, *we should all be welcome*. Accordingly several went with me there, and he was very kind, giving us an Account of *George Keith's* railing against us the Day before, and how disagreeable it was to the Assembly. *Keith* left a broad Sheet printed, wherein he pretended to prove the *Quakers* no *Christians*, out of their own Books; I had an Answer thereto in print, which Friends were glad of, and I left with them several to spread where he had left his.

After we had dined, we took our Leave, and a Friend, my Guide, went with me, and brought me to a People call'd *Labadies*, by whom we were civilly entertained in their Way. When Supper came in, it was placed upon a long Table in a large Room, where, when all Things were ready, came in, at a Call, about twenty Men or upwards, but no Woman: We all sat down, they placed me and my Companion near the Head of the Table, and having paused a short Space, one pulled off his Hat, but not the rest, till a short Space after, and then one after another they pulled all their Hats off, and in that uncovered Posture sat silent (uttering no Words that we could hear) near Half a Quarter of an Hour; and as they did not uncover at once, so neither did they cover themselves again at

E

once;

once ; but as they put on their Hats fell to eating, not regarding those who were still uncovered, so that it might be about two Minutes time or more between the first and last putting on of their Hats. I afterwards queried with my Companion concerning *the Reason of their Conduct*, and he gave this for Answer, That they held it unlawful to pray till they felt some inward Motion for the same ; and that secret Prayer was more acceptable than to utter Words ; and that it was most proper for every one to pray, as moved thereto by the Spirit in their own Minds.

I likewise queried, *if they had no Women amongst them ?* He told me they had, but the Women eat by themselves, and the Men by themselves, having all Things in common, respecting their Household Affairs, so that none could claim any more Right than another to any Part of their Stock, whether in Trade or Husbandry ; and if any had a mind to join with them, whether Rich or Poor, they must put what they had in the common Stock, and if they afterwards had a Mind to leave the Society, they must likewise leave what they brought, and go out empty handed.

They frequently expounded the Scriptures among themselves, and being a very large Family, in all upwards of a Hundred Men, Women and Children, carried on something of the Manufactory of Linen, and had a very large Plantation of Corn, Tobacco, Flax, and Hemp, together with Cattle of several Kinds. But at my last going thither, these People were all scattered and gone, and nothing of them remaining of a religious Community in that Shape.

I left this Place and travelled through the Country to *Philadelphia*, and was there seized with a *Fever and Ague*, which held me about thirteen Weeks, and I staid there till the Yearly-meeting came on, which was very large, but my Disorder of the *Ague* would not admit my being at one Meeting ; *George Keith* with his Companions came, but the Disturbance they gave
was

was a considerable Advantage to Friends, and the Meeting ended to great Satisfaction.

Being recovered and pretty strong, I left *Pennsylvania*, and travelled through the *Jerseys* East and West, and having given Expectation to a Friend, one *James Miller* in *Scotland*, who had a Sister married to one of the *Barclay's* Family, that if I came near where she dwelt, I would visit her at his Request. She was a very zealous honest Friend, but her Husband had joined with *Keith*, and left Friends; and on enquiring about her, where she dwelt? I was told, it would be very little out of my Way. Then a young Man offered to be my Guide, to pay her a Visit; and when we came to the House, there were sundry Priests, with others, met to sprinkle an Infant, the said *Barclay's* Grandchild: The Ceremony was over before we got there, we coming from *Sbrewsbury* Yearly-meeting, where *Keith* also had been, but gave us no Disturbance, nor did he come to our Meeting at all, but held a Meeting a small Distance from us for two Days, and then went off. Our Meeting held three Days, and was thought to be larger by much, in Expectation that *George Keith* would be there. It ended well, and it was said, some were convinced at that Meeting.

But to return to my Friend *Barclay*; she was in an Appartment by herself, and gave me a short Account of what they were or had been doing; saying, *They have sprinkled the Babe my Grand-child, and the Ceremony is over, but they have not yet been to Dinner*; to which she added, *my Husband will be earnest for thy Company; if thou hast Freedom to go, I shall leave thee at Liberty, but if thou refuses to go, they will be ready to report, that thou durst not face them*; adding, *I should be pleased with your Company* (meaning me and my Companion) *to dine with me, but it will be best, I think, for you to dine with them, and I hope, said she, the Lord will give you Wisdom to conduct yourselves, that they may have no just Cause to reproach the Principle on your Account.*

She had no sooner ended, than (as she had suggested) her Husband came, and after some Compliments, and Enquiry about his Brother-in-law *James Miller*, and Relations at *Ury*, we were called to Dinner, and by no means would he excuse me : We went in, and the Mistress of the Feast, the Mother of the Babe then sprinkled, would have me sit at her right Hand, and set *George Keith* at her left. We all sat down, and after a short Pause *George Keith* stood up with the rest of the Company, save me and my Companion, we keeping our Places, and Hats on, while he repeated a long Prayer for the Church and State, Bishops, and all the inferior Clergy, the Queen, and Dutchess Dowager of *Hanover*, &c. The Grace being ended, the Mistress carved, and would serve me first : I would have refused, and put it to *George Keith*, but he refused it likewise : When she had done helping us and herself, she began to catechise me in the following manner.

After enquiring about her Relations at *Ury* in *Scotland*, and her Uncle *Miller*, she then desired to know my Business in *Scotland*, pretending to suppose me a Merchant that dealt in Linen to sell in *England* ; but I saw her Design was to lead me to some unwary Answer, for *Keith* and the rest to find Matter of Objection to. This put me upon my Guard to make Reply cautiously ; I freely own'd I had no Concern in buying or selling of any sort of Goods. *Pray then, Sir, what was your Call there ?* I replied, that I thought it my place sometimes to advise my Friends and others, to endeavour so to live, that Death, when it comes, might not be a Terror to them ; and doubt not but thou wilt count this a good Work, and needful to be done. She readily allowed, *that it was very needful*, and the more so, *for that the Age was now very wicked*. Then she proceeded to query the Reason of my coming into those Parts, pretending to suppose it was on account of Trade, as being a Supercargoe ; with sundry trifling

trifling and impertinent Questions, as *when I was in such and such Places?* To all which I gave her Answers to the same Effect as before, that my designed Business was the same in this Country as in *Scotland*. Then she proceeded to more trifling Questions, as *when I landed?* and *where?* and *which Way I was going?* All the Company at Table gave ear to our Dialogue, which appeared to me very weak in such a learned Company as they thought themselves to be, and none so much as put in a Word between us. Dinner being ended, I desired to be excused, for that Time called me away, and my Friends would wait for me at the Ferry, which we had to pass that Evening. Thus *Keith* and I met and parted.

Then taking Leave, I went to see my worthy Friend in her own Appartment, with whom we had a short, but very agreeable Opportunity: We took our Leave and went to *Woodbridge*, where the next Day we had a Meeting, and *George Keith* preached at *Amboy* the same Day, which Places are not far apart; we often interfered one with the other, but he no more gave me any Challenge to dispute, but took another Method to put a Stop to my Travelling, as will appear afterwards. We came to *Long-Island*, and a Meeting was appointed for me at a small Village call'd *Hempstead*, where *George Keith* also was, either by Accident or Design, and had at the same appointed to preach within our hearing, and between the two Appointments, there was a very large Gathering; and I being young and strong, my Voice was plainly heard by the People who were with *Keith*, so that they all left his Meeting and came to ours, (for we had Room enough for both Meetings, it being held in a very large Barn) except he that exercised as Clerk, and one *William Bradford*, who had been a Printer for Friends at *Philadelphia*, but deserting the Society, Friends took the Business from him. But some Time after, *Keith* and the said *Bradford* agreed,

that *Bradford* should come and try if no Advantage might be taken at my Doctrine ; accordingly he came, and pull'd out of his Pocket a small Book, with Pen and Ink, and stedfastly star'd in my Face, to put me out of Countenance if he could ; but I was above being daunted at that Time, though at other Times very incident to it. He open'd his said Book and writ about two Lines in it, then shut it again, continuing his staring, to try (as some thought) whether he could not daunt me ; but it was past his Skill, for I felt both inward and outward Strength, and divine Power to fill my Heart, and my Face was like Brass to all Opposition ; he opened his Book, writ about two Lines more, and a little after about two more, in the whole about six Lines in a small octavo Leaf ; and after I had done he stood up and said, *Will you stand by these Doctrines in publick that have been now preached ?* (meaning by publick Dispute.) A worthy Friend, *John Rodman* by Name, desired him to be quiet, and after Meeting was ended he should be answered. Accordingly the Meeting concluded, and he waited for his Answer. To which Friend *Rodman* said, *William, thou knowest what our Friend hath been concerned to speak about this Day, are such Points as have been by the Press argued over and over ; and as the Controversy has been some Years in the Press, 'tis therefore needless at this Time o' Day to reduce it to a verbal Dispute.* But he wanted to hear what I would say to the matter ; and I told him, his Questions being more for Contention than Edification, I therefore did not think myself obliged to answer them ; more especially, since for his Contentions and disorderly walking, he had been dealt with and advised in a Brotherly and *Christian* Spirit to repent, but his persisting in the same, had obliged his Friends to disown him, and for this Reason, I said, *I have no more to say to thee on this Head.* He turned from me, and in a very angry manner

manner said, *I should bear of it in another Way.* But I called him back, having something to say on another Subject ; which was to deliver some Tokens of Gold sent his Wife by her Sister from *London* : This soften'd him somewhat, (he finding the Pieces to agree with the Letter, which I requested might be opened before my Friends there) and brought him to confess, that he believed I was a very honest Man, and he was sorry I should be under such a Delusion, as to be in Communion with that erroneous People. But at his Return to *Keitb*, they laid their Heads together, and trump'd up the following Depositions from what he had writ as aforesaid, viz.

‘ **I** *William Bradford*, of the City of *New-York*, aged
 ‘ about forty Years, depose upon the holy Evan-
 ‘ gelists. The 21st of *November 1702*, going into the
 ‘ *Quakers Meeting* at *Natbaniel Pearsal*’s deceased, in
 ‘ *Hempstead*, I heard one *Bown*, that is lately come out
 ‘ of *England*, preach, and the first Words I heard him
 ‘ say, were *the Sign of the Cross* ; and thus ; Friends,
 ‘ having gone through the *Papist Baptism*, let us
 ‘ examine the Church of *England* : Well, what do
 ‘ they do ? Why the Bishop lays his Hands upon those
 ‘ that have learned the Languages, and ordains them
 ‘ to be Ministers. Well ! and what do they do ? Why
 ‘ they baptize the Children, the young Children, and
 ‘ sprinkle a little Water in their Faces, and by this
 ‘ they make the Child a *Christian*, as they say, and
 ‘ for so doing the Childrens Parents must give the
 ‘ Priest 4d. or a Groat ; indeed this is an easy Way of
 ‘ making *Christians* for a Groat ! And how do they
 ‘ do this ? Their own Catechism tells us the Priest
 ‘ says to the Child, What is thy Name ? The Child
 ‘ answers, *Thomas, James, Mary, &c.* Well ! and who
 ‘ gave thee this Name ? The Child answers, my God-
 ‘ fathers and God-mothers in my Baptism, wherein I

' was made a Member of Christ. This is brave to be
 ' made a Member of Christ ! Who would not have a
 ' little Water sprinkled in their Faces ? And what did
 ' your God-fathers and God-mothers then for you ?
 ' *Answer*, They did promise and vow three Things
 ' in my Name ; 1st. That I should renounce the
 ' Devil and all his Works, the Poms and Vanities of
 ' this wicked World, and all the sinful Lusts of the
 ' Flesh. Ay ! did they so ? this is brave. Well !
 ' what did they promise more ? 2^{dly}. That I should
 ' keep God's holy Will and Commandments, and
 ' walk in the same all the Days of my Life : And yet
 ' in Contradiction to this, they plead for Sin Term
 ' of Life, and say they can't keep God's Command-
 ' ments in this Life. Why ! this is strange, that the
 ' God-fathers and God-mothers should promise what
 ' they believe they can't perform. And does the God-
 ' fathers and God-mothers thus promise ? yes, they do.
 ' But this is strange, that their God should need a God-
 ' father and God-mother. But Friends, our God is
 ' the true and living God ; in the first of *John* it is
 ' said, *In the Beginning was the Word, and the Word*
 ' *was God*. But this God had no need of a God-father
 ' or God-mother. Well ! and what do the *Presbyte-*
 ' *rians* do ? Why they baptize their Infants also ; but
 ' as I take it, they do not make use of God-fathers
 ' and God-mothers, nor the Sign of the Cross : They
 ' have thrown away that piece of *Poper*y.

' Next, as to the Lord's Supper, I shall speak very
 ' brief ; Christ says, *that which goes in at the Mouth*
 ' *defiles not*. So I shall make this Application : The
 ' Bread and Wine which they receive, and call the
 ' Lord's Supper, goes in at the Mouth, and so into
 ' the Draught, and profits not. They call it a Sign ;
 ' yea, and an empty Sign it is. But by these Ways
 ' and Forms the Hirelings deceive the People : But we
 ' have had sufficient Proof of these Hirelings in our
 ' Day ; for they will turn with every Wind, and
 ' every

‘ every Turn that will answer their Priests Ends, as
‘ we have seen fulfilled largely in our Day.

‘ *William Bradford.*

Coram nobis ‘ JOSEPH SMITH, } Justices.
‘ EDWARD BURROWS,

‘ *A true Copy by Thomas Cardall, High-Sheriff.*

Having patch'd up the above Deposition in their own Way and Manner, and Form of Expression, *Keith* informs, and *Bradford* was his Evidence ; and being at a Loss for want of another Evidence to confirm *Bradford's*, (without which they could not proceed) they met with a young Man that had been there, and *Keith* got some Words out of him, which he said he heard spoken ; then they threatned, if he did not come in for Evidence to what he had heard, what they would do to him ; therefore he was prevailed on, thro' Fear, to give his Evidence on Oath, in the Words *George Keith* had got from him by Guile, before the said two Justices, which he did as followeth, although to no purpose.

‘ **R** *Ichard Smith*, aged about 28 Years, deposeth
‘ upon the four Evangelists : That on *Sunday*
‘ last, he, this Deponent was at a *Quakers* Meeting in
‘ *Hempstead*, where he heard a Man preach, whose
‘ Name he since understands is *Samuel Bowne* : In his
‘ preaching, he, this Deponent, remembers to have
‘ heard him speak these Words, or Words to the like
‘ Effect, viz. That the Church of *England* in Baptism
‘ made use of God-fathers and God-mothers ; but our
‘ God is the ever living God, and has no need of a
‘ God-father or God-mother ; And further this Depo-
‘ nent saith not.

‘ *Richard Smith.*

Jurat 24th Die 9bris ‘ JOSEPH SMITH, } Justices.
1702, coram nobis ‘ EDWARD BURROWS,

Having

Having thus laid a Foundation for a Prosecution, a Warrant was issued out. A Copy of which is as under.

Queens }
County } ' JOSEPH SMITH, *Esq;* EDWARD
' BURROWS, *Esq;* *Justices of the*
' *Peace for Queens County, to the*
' *High-Sheriff of the County, Greet-*
' *ing.*

' **Y**OU are hereby, in her Majesty's Name,
' strictly charged and commanded, immediately
' on the Receipt hereof, to attack the Body of *Samuel*
' *Bowne*, a *Quaker*, if he can be found in your Bail-
' wick, and to bring his Body before us, to answer
' to such Matters of Misdemeanour, as shall on her
' Majesty's Behalf be objected against him. And
' hereof fail not at your Peril. Dated under our
' Hands and Seals this 24th 9ber 1702,

Vera Copia Ex. p. ' JOS. SMITH, }
Tho. Cardall, vic. ' EDW. BURROWS, } *Justices.*

Thus all Things were ready to be put in Execution, and sundry substantial People, not Friends, would have had me gone off, but that I could not do; therefore on the 29th of the same Month, as I was at *Flushing* in *Long-Island*, it being the Half-yearly Meeting, which was very large, *Keith* being expected there: When the Meeting was fully set, the High-Sheriff came with a very large Company with him, who were all armed; some had Guns, others Pitchforks, others Swords, Clubs, Halberts, &c. as if they should meet with great Opposition in taking a poor silly harmless Sheep out of the Flock. The Sheriff stepping up into the Gallery, took me by the Hand, and told me, *I was his Prisoner*. By what Authority? said I: He pull'd out his Warrant, and shew'd it me; I told him that Warrant was to take up *Samuel Bowne*, and my Name was not *Samuel Bowne*, but

but that Friend's Name is so, pointing at the Friend by me : We know him, said he, that's not the Man, but you are the Man : Pray then, says he, *What's your Name?* That, said I, is a Question which requires Consideration, whether proper to answer or not, for no Man is bound to answer to his own Prejudice ; the Law forces none to accuse himself. Thus we *pro'd* and *con'd* a little Time, and I got up from my Seat, and *John Rodman*, *Samuel Bowne*, and sundry other Friends, and walked out of the Meeting, it not being proper to discourse there at that Time ; and they on conversing with the Sheriff, who in his Nature was a very moderate Man, having known Friends in *England*, easily prevail'd on him to stay the Meeting, with all his Retinue, and afterwards they would consider what was best to be done. They then willingly laid down their Arms on the outside of the Door, and came in, which encreas'd the Throng very much : The Meeting was silent a considerable Time, and the Sheriff's Company queried of one another privately, so as I heard it, *Why I did not preach?* Others concluding that I should preach no more, being now a Prisoner ; *that's enough to silence him*, said they : But finding the Word like as a Fire, I could no longer refrain, but standing up, I had a very agreeable Service, both to myself and Friends, with the rest of the Company ; the Sheriff himself and his Company also, spoke well of it : It was the first Day of the Meeting, and the seventh of the Week.

After Meeting was ended, sundry Friends went to *Samuel Bowne's*, to consult with the Sheriff, and he being very moderate, and in a good Humour, spoke very mild and courteously, blaming *Keith* and *Bradford*, and gave Liberty that I should stay with my Friends until Fifth-day following, there being two Days of the Meeting yet to come, and a Funeral of a noted Friend to be the Day after it ended : The Meeting encreased, and the last was both largest and most open ; it was supposed

supposed there might be near Two Thousand People the last Day, but *Keith* did not come there.

Now the Time for my Appearance before the Justices being come, several substantial Friends went with me, and a great Crowd of other People came to hear; but for want of the Conveniency of a large Hall, which they might have had, but by the Coldness of the Season, as was pretended, the Justices would not go into it, so they were deprived of the Opportunity for want of Room to hear my Examination.

There were four Justices, viz. *Joseph Smith*, *Edward Burrows*, *John Smith* and *Jonathan Whitehead*. This last was a very moderate Man, and endeavoured much to have set me at Liberty; but they had a Priest with them, who endeavoured to put the worst Construction on every Thing I said. Besides, they had shut a Man up behind in a Closet, to take in short Hand the Examination, that they might peruse the same to their own Advantage: But the Man was so very drunk, that he lost his Papers going Home, and a Friend providentially found them, to their great Disappointment and Shame: Great Enquiry was made about them among the People in vain.

Having done what they thought fit in examining me, they turned me and my Friends out of the Room, to consult what was to be further done; and after a little Time, we were all called in, I to receive my Doom, and my Friends to hear it; and the Clerk, as Mouth of the Court, said, *These honourable Justices have agreed, that you must enter into a Two Thousand Pound Bail, yourself in 1000l. and two of your Friends in 500l. each, or else be committed to the common Goal.* I answered, I could enter into no Bond on that Account. Here one of the Justices queried, *if the Sum was too large?* I answered, that was nothing to the Matter, if as small a Sum as Three-halfpence would do, I should not do it, it being a Matter of such a Nature that I could by no Means comply with. Then the
last

last Justice offered to be bound for me, in what Sum they required. But not only I, but all my Friends, did oppose it with all our Might ; giving them, as well as him, the Reason for it.

It growing late the Court broke up, and this Justice begged that he might have me to his House, and he would see me forth coming on the Morrow ; which they readily granted him, and then they adjourned till ten o' Clock next Day, giving their Clerk Orders to provide my *Mittimus* by that Time.

I went with my kind Friend the young Justice to his House, and found very good and kind Entertainment, his Wife being a very religious, tender-hearted Friend, and took great Care of me. Next Morning we met again, the *Mittimus* was brought in, executed, and was as under.

Queens } ' JOSEPH SMITH, *Esq*; EDWARD BUR-
County } ' ROWS, *Esq*; JOHN SMITH, *Esq*; and
' JONATHAN WHITEHEAD, *Esq*;
' *Justices of the Peace for Queens*
' *County, &c. To the High-Sheriff*
' *of Queens County, Greeting.*

' WE send you herewithal the Body of Samuel
' Bownas, a *Quaker*, brought before us this
' Day, and charged with speaking scandalous Lies of,
' and Reflections against, the Church of *England*, as
' by Law established, and other Misdemeanours by
' him done and spoken at a publick Assembly in *Hemp-*
' *stead* in this County, on the 21st Day of this Instant
' 9ber. And therefore these are in Behalf of her
' Majesty to command you, that immediately you
' receive the said Samuel Bownas, and him safely keep
' in the common Goal of this County, until that he
' shall be thence deliver'd by the due Course of her
' Majesty's

• Majesty's Laws. Dated under our Hands and Seals
 • *Jemeca* in ' at * *Jemeca* this 30th Day of 9ber, in the second
Long-Island, • Year of the Reign of our sovereign Lady Queen
 in New- • *Anne*, of England, &c. Annoq; Dom. 1702.
 York Go-
 vernment.

A true Copy,
 by Tho. Cardall.

• JOSEPH SMITH,
 • EDWARD BURROWS,
 • JOHN SMITH,
 • JONATHAN WHITEHEAD.'

Now I was delivered up a Prisoner, and my Friends left me, having first got me a good wholesome Room, and a very good Bed, taking Care that I should want nothing necessary for Life. This continued for three Months; at the End of which a special Commission of Oyer and Terminer, and general Goal Delivery was given to *John Bridges*, Esq; Chief Justice of the Province; *Robert Miller*, Esq; second; *Thomas Willett*, *John Jackson*, and *Edward Burrows*: And on the 26th Day of the Twelfth Month, *Bridges* and *Miller* came, attended with much Company, in great Pomp, with Trumpets and other Musick before them, to hold the said Court; and about the fourth Hour in the Afternoon, they in the same Order went into Court, which was held in the Hall, read their Commission, and call'd over the Jury, to whom they gave an uncommon Charge, adjourning till *Monday* the 28th, at Ten o' Clock in the Morning.

At the same Time the Court met, and Proclamation was made as follows.

Cryer. O yes! Silence on Pain of Imprisonment.

Call'd over the Grand Jury, consisting of twenty two Men, and charged them to retire to their Chamber, and the Attorney General should send them Business.

The Court adjourns.

Cryer. O yes! All manner of Persons that have any Business at this Court of Oyer and Terminer, let them

them depart hence, and come To-morrow Morning at Eight o' Clock, and they shall be heard.

Accordingly the Grand Jury retired, and had a Bill of Indictment sent them against me, but I could never get a Copy of it first nor last. I had prepared sundry Reasons to set *Bradford's* Evidences aside, which are here omitted, they being pretty large, but the Grand Jury had the same before them, and they were of considerable Weight with them. The 29th the Court met.

Cryer. O yes! All manner of Persons that have any Business at this Court of Oyer and Terminer, let them draw near, and they shall be heard.

The Clerk ordered to call over the Jury.

Richard Cornell, Foreman, Ephraim Goulding, John Clayer, Isaac Hicks, Robert Hubbs, Ridganiell Mott, Theodorus Vanderwick, Samuel Denton jun. Joseph Mott, Richard Valentine, Nathaniel Cole jun. Joseph Dickenson, Isaac Doughty, Samuel Emery, John Smith, John Serin, John Oakey, Samuel Hallet, Richard Alsop, John Hunt, James Clement, and William Bloodgood.

Then it was demanded, what Business the Jury had to lay before the Court? and they presented two Bills, one against a Woman for some Misdemeanour, and the Bill against me, both indorsed *Ignoramus*. Upon which the Judge was very ahgry; the other Justices on the Bench being mostly *Presbyterians*, said little or nothing to the matter, but he addressing himself to the Jury, said thus; *Gentlemen, surely you have forgot your Oaths, and for so doing I could give you some hard Names, but at present shall forbear: Is this your Verdict touching the Quaker?* for they matter'd not the other Bill, if they could have had their Ends on me.

The Foreman said, It is Sir.

Judge. *I demand your Reasons, why you have not found the Bill against him?* meaning me.

One, whose Name was *James Clement*, a bold Man, well skill'd in the Law, answer'd, we are sworn to keep

keep the Queen's Secrets, our Fellows, and our own ; and for that Reason we declare no Reasons.

Judge. *Now Mr. Wiseman speaks, but I tell you, you are not so sworn, and I could find in my Heart to lay you by the Heels, and a Fine upon your Brethren.*

Clement reply'd ; he might if he pleased, but when it was done, it should be expos'd with as much Expedition as the Case would admit in *Westminster-hall* ; for, *adds he*, Juries, neither Grand nor Petty, are to be menaced with Threats of Stocks or Fines, but they are to act freely, according to the best of their Judgments on the Evidence before them.

Now the Judge finding he had not Children to deal with, altered his manner of Address, and began to flatter, and requested that they would take back both Bills, and resume their Considerations upon them. On this the Jury was in Judgment divided, but at last they all consented, and then the Court adjourn'd till Nine o' Clock the next Day.

Met according to Adjournment.

Cryer. O yes ! All manner of Persons that have any Business at the Court of Oyer and Terminer, let them draw near and they shall be heard.

Cryer. Call over the Jury ; which being done.

Judge. Foreman, how find you the Bills ?

Foreman. As we did Yesterday.

On which Bridges in great Wrath charged them with obstructing the Course of Justice.

Why ? says Clement ! because we can't be of the same Mind as the Court is. We would have you to know, that we desire no other but that Justice may take place.

The Judge now threatned to lay Clement by the Heels again. But Clement, no Way daunted, told him, he might if he pleased ; but if he did, he should hear of it in another Place.

The Clerk was now ordered to call over the Jury by Name singly, to shew their Reasons, why they could

could or could not find the Bills. Sundry of them refused to say any more than, *That is our Verdict.* Others again, said, *How unreasonable, and against Law it is, that the Court should endeavour to perjure the Jury, by revealing their Secrets in the Face of the Country.* However, it appeared after the Examination of the Jury, that seven were for finding the Bill, and fifteen stood firm against them for the Verdict, as signed by the Foreman. Which anger'd the Judge to that Degree, that he gave strict Orders to keep me more close than before; threatening, *As Justice cannot be here come at, I'll send him to London, chained to the * Man of War's Deck, like other vile Criminals, with his Crimes and Misdemeanours along with him, which are of the biggest Nature and most dangerous Consequence, as tending to subvert both Church and State.* When an Account of this was brought me, I was under a great Cloud, and the Power of Darkeness so very strong upon me, that I desired Death rather than Life, fearing that if I was so served, I should be an Object of Derision to all on board, and that I should not be able to bear the Suffering which I must undergo in such a Case, with that Decency and Honour which was requisite in so good a Cause.

The Friends left me alone, and I having lost all my Faith, which was still worse than being alone, I thought myself the most wretched among Men, and scarcely able to live under it. At which Time, an honest old * Man (his Name was *Thomas Hicks*, who had been Chief Justice in the Province some Years, and well vers'd in the Law) came to visit me, and on my standing up to shew my Respects to him, he took me in his Arms, saluting me with Tears; thus expressing himself: 'Dear *Samuel*, the Lord hath made Use of 'you, as an Instrument, to put a Stop to arbitrary 'Proceedings in our Courts of Justice, which have 'met with great Encouragement since his Lordship 'came here for Governor; (meaning the Lord Corn-

*A Man of War was then lying at York, ready to sail Con-voy for England.

*Note, he did not profess with us, but was almost one in Principle.

‘ bury, who oppressed the People sorely.) But there
 ‘ has never so successful a Stand been made against it
 ‘ as at this Time : And now, they threaten to send
 ‘ you to *England* chained to the Man of War’s Deck :
 ‘ Fear not, *Samuel*, adds he, they can no more send
 ‘ you there than they can send me ; for the Law, both
 ‘ here and in *England*, is such, that every Criminal
 ‘ must be tried where the Cause of Action is ; else,
 ‘ why in *England* do they remove Criminals from one
 ‘ County to another to take their Trials where the
 ‘ Offence was committed ? But you may, after the
 ‘ Judgment of the Court is given against you, bring
 ‘ your Appeal against that Judgment ; and you secu-
 ‘ ring the Payment of such Fees as are commonly
 ‘ allowed in the like Case, they dare not deny your
 ‘ Appeal. But the Judge frets because he cannot have
 ‘ his End against you : And besides, the Governor
 ‘ is disgusted also, he expecting to have made con-
 ‘ siderable Advantage by it ; but the Country’s Eyes
 ‘ are now opened, and you are not now alone, but it
 ‘ is the Case of every Subject ; and they will never
 ‘ be able now to get a Jury to answer their End,
 ‘ the Eyes of the Country are so clearly opened by
 ‘ your Case. Had, *says he*, the *Presbyterians* stood as
 ‘ you have done, they had not so tamely left their
 ‘ Meeting-houses to the Church : But that People had
 ‘ never so good a hand at Suffering in the Case of Con-
 ‘ science, as they have had in persecuting others that
 ‘ differed from them.’ Here he blamed that People
 very much, for being so compliable to all the Claims
 of the Governor, although never so unreasonable and
 against Law.

And this honest Man, as if he had been sent by
 divine Commission, by his Discourse raised my droop-
 ing Spirits, renewed my Faith, and I was quite ano-
 ther Man : And as he said, so it proved. They could
 not get the next Jury to find the Bill against me.

But

But to return, I could never get a Copy of the Indictment against me, but the Judge gave the Sheriff Order to keep me more close. And I was accordingly put up in a small Room made of Logs, which had been protested against as an unlawful Prison two Years before ; but that made no Difference : I was lock'd up there, and my Friends denied coming to me.

I was now advised to *demand my Liberty, as a Right due by Law*, and I did so ; but it was denied me, without shewing any other Reason, than that I might thank the Grand Jury for my then Confinement. It was likewise thought proper to lay the Case before the Governor by *Petition*, and demand my Liberty of him also ; which *Petition* is omitted for Brevity's Sake. But all was in vain, *for they were resolved not to be so baffled by the Country*, they said, *but they would bring me to Justice*. And Keith printed some Sheets, pretending to open the Eyes of the People, saying, that *I had reproach'd the Church, the Ordinances and Government* ; aggravating the Case to the highest. But what he printed with a Design to make my Case appear the worse, had quite the contrary Effect upon the People, it being look'd upon as no other than the Product of Envy and Revenge against the *Quakers* in general, and me in particular.

However, the Court was adjourn'd for six Weeks ; and finding myself more closely confined than before, and not knowing when or how it would end, I began to be very thoughtful what Method to take, not to be chargeable to my Friends : And as I was full of Thought on my Pillow about the Matter, it came into my Mind to try *if I could learn to make Shoes* ; and applying myself to a *Scotch Churchman* in the Neighbourhood, one *Charles Williams*, a good natured Man, I made a Proposal to buy a Pair of Shoes of him, cut out for me to make up, and to give him the same Price as if made, withal desiring him to let me have Materials and Tools to go on with the Work, request-

ing that he would be so kind as to shew me how to begin and proceed in it : I acquainted him with my Reason for so doing. He replied, it is very honest and honourable in you : But, added he, if one of our Ministers was in the like State, they would think it too mean for them to take up such a diminutive Practice, though it were for Bread : And your Friends perhaps will not like it. However, he readily fell in with me, that if I could get my Bread with my own Hands, it was most agreeable with *Paul's* Practice ; and accordingly next Morning he brought me Leather cut out, with Materials and Tools to work with, and with his Direction I closed one of the upper Leathers before he left me, and he put it on the Last for me, and by Night I finished that Shoe ; which when he came to see, he admired it was so well done, shewing me how to mend the Faults in the next, which I finished the next Day ; he then supposed I had done something at the Trade before, but was mistaken : And when I would have paid him, he refused it, and told me, he would not take any Money of me ; so I proposed, that if he would give the Leather, I would give my Work ; and so by Consent we gave the Shoes to a poor honest Man that did go on Errands for us both. I had then more Work of him, and he was so pleased with it, that he would allow me half Pay for making it up, and was so forward to advance my Wages in a few Weeks, that unless I would take full Pay, he cheerfully told me, *I must look out for another Master.* I as pleasantly replied, I did not desire to change. Well then, replied he, I sell the Shoes you make for as much as any of the like Sizes made in my Shop.

I made such Improvement in this Business, that I could in a little Time earn fifteen Shilling per Week, being three Shillings their Money for making a Pair of large Man's Shoes, which was my chief Work. Now their Shilling was about Nine-pence Sterling.

This

This new Trade was of very great Service to me, by both diverting Body and Mind ; and finding I now could supply my own Wants with my own Hands, it gave me great Ease indeed : But some Friends were uneasy that I should do it, as supposing it would be to their Dishonour ; but others again were glad, and thought it a great Honour to the Cause of the Gospel ; and they rejoiced with thankful Hearts that I succeeded so well.

Going on thus some Weeks, my kind Master came one Morning, and did not bring so much Work as before. I asked him the Reason ? adding pleasantly, What doth my Credit sink, that I have no more Work brought ? He smiling said ! *It's not best to trust Goal Birds too far*, and I am now resolved you shall work no more for me after these I have now brought. Why ! what is the Matter ? said I. He added, you shall be a Master as well as I. How can that be ? said I. He replied, you shall have Leather of your own, and by doing that you may get Eight-pence, Ten-pence or a Shilling a Pair more than you do now. But I told him I had rather work Journey-work for him than do so : For I knew not how to get Leather and other Materials, and when I had it, I was a Stranger to the cutting it out. Trouble not yourself about that, said he, for I will do all this for you : And so he did with much Cheerfulness, delighting to serve me effectually.

I went on thus for several Months, and he came to me every Day once or twice, and was a very cheerful pleasant temper'd Man, but too much addicted to take delight in some of his Neighbours Company, who too often were disguised with strong Liquor, and he would often say, if you were to continue here, I should overcome it, and I verily believe should be a sober *Quaker*. I told him he must leave the Company he too much frequented ; which he not observing, I heard afterwards they proved very hurtful to him. We had very often serious Conversation about Religion, and it appeared

to me, he had been favoured with an enlightned Understanding, and would confess, if there was any such Thing as preaching Christ truly, it was amongst the *Quakers*; for both *Churchmen*, *Presbyterians*, *Independents*, and others, all preach *themselves*, and for their own Advantage in this World; so that if there was *no Pay*, there would be *no Preaching*. He frequently attended our Meetings for a Time.

But to return to the Proceedings of the Court, which adjourn'd from the 4th Day of the First Month 1702-3, for about six Weeks, and so continued by several Adjournments to the last Day of the Eighth Month following. The Occasion of these Adjournments was this; Judge *Bridges* was ill, and had been for some Time declining, but was expected to be able to attend the Service of the Court, and take Vengeance on me and the *Quakers*, none being thought so fit for that Work as he; yet he never did, but died some Months before I was set at Liberty.

I had in this Time of Confinement sundry Visits, two of which were more remarkable than the rest. The first was by an *Indian King*, with three of his chief Men with him; and the other by one *John Rogers* from *New London*, and he staid with me from the Time he came about six Days. An Abstract of both Conferences are as follow, viz.

I shall first take Notice of the Conference with the *Indian King*, as he stiled himself; but his Nation was much wasted and almost extinct, so that he had but a small People to rule. However, there was in him some Marks of Superiority above the other three who attended him, who shew'd some Regard to him as their Sovereign.

This *Indian*, with these his Attendants, came to visit me, and staid some Time, enquiring the Cause of my Confinement: An Account of which I gave them as intelligibly as I could, finding they understood *English* better than they could speak it. The Conference

ference was mostly between the King and me, the rest but very seldom putting in a Word.

The King asked, *If I was a Christian?* I told him I was. *And are they,* said he, *Christians too that keep you here?* I said they professed themselves to be so. Then he and his Company shewed their Admiration, that one *Christian* could do thus to another. And then he enquired concerning the Difference between me and them. I replied, it consisted of sundry Particulars, *first*, My Adversaries hold with sprinkling a little Water on the Face of an Infant, using a Form of Words, and the Ceremony of making the Sign of a Cross with their Finger on the Babe's Forehead, calling this *Baptism*, and urging it as *essential* to future Happiness: And I, with my Brethren, can see no Good in this Ceremony. Here they talked one with another again, but I understood them not. After

which they asked me, *If I thought there was nothing in this Ceremony of Good, to secure our future Happiness?* I said, I see nothing of Good in it. *I was right*, they said, *neither do we*: Asking, *wherein do you further differ from them?* I proceeded, That they held it needful to take, at certain Times, a Piece of Bread to eat, with a small Quantity of Wine to drink after 'tis consecrated, as they call it, which they pretend to do in Remembrance of Christ our Saviour, urging this as *necessary* to our future Happiness, as the former, calling it the *Lord's Supper*. He told me, that they had seen both these Ceremonies put in Practice by the *Presbyterians*, but could not understand, that if it was a *Supper*, why they used it in the *Middle of the Day*; but they look'd upon them both as very insignificant to the End proposed; saying, *The * Mang Monettay look'd* *at the Heart, how it was devoted, and not at these Childish Things.* Asking, *wherein do you differ further from them?*

I proceeded, that they held it *lawful* to kill and destroy their Enemies; but we cannot think that good and right in us; but rather endeavour to overcome our Enemies

*The great God they frequently called so.

with courteous and friendly Offices and Kindness, and to assuage their Wrath by Mildness and Perswasion, and bring them to consider the Injury they are doing to such as can't in Conscience revenge themselves again. He assented, *that this was good: But who can do it?* said he; *when my Enemies seek my Life, how can I do other than use my Endeavour to destroy them in my own Defence?* My Answer was, That unless we were under the Government of a better Spirit than our Enemies, we could not do it; but if we are under the Government of the good Spirit, which seeks not to destroy Mens Lives, but to save them, and teaches us to do Good for Evil, and to forgive Injuries, then we can submit to *Providence*, putting our Trust in the great God to save us from the Violence and Wrath of our Enemies. The King said, *Indeed this is very good; but do you do thus when provoked by your Enemies?* I said, sundry of our Friends had done so, and been saved from the Rage of their Enemies, who have confessed our Friends to be good Men. *Ay*, said he, *they are good indeed; for if all came into this Way, there would then be no more need of War, nor killing one the other to enlarge their Kingdoms, nor one Nation want to overcome another.* I then asked him, if this was not a right Principle; and what would much add to the Happiness of Mankind? They all four said, *it was very good indeed; but feared few would embrace this Doctrine.* I said, all Things have their Beginnings, and 'tis now our Duty to embrace this Truth, hoping that others by this Example may do the same. They lifted up their Eyes as a Token of their Assent, shewing by their Words their Desire that this good Spirit might prevail in the World: *Then*, said they, *Things will go well.* But *wherein*, added he, *do you differ more from them?* I said, we held it unlawful to swear in any Case; but our Adversaries did not.

I found they had not any Notion about Oaths, and so they dropt it, being desirous of introducing another Subject;

Subject ; for having observed our Friends Behaviour in not pulling off their Hats as others did, they wanted to know *our Reasons for it* : I said, uncovering our Heads was a Token of Honour we paid to the great God in our Prayers to him ; and we thought any Homage equal to it ought not to be given to any of his Creatures. They said, *it was all very good*.

Then we sat silent some Time ; and I asked them, what they thought of the *Great God* ? One of them took a piece of a Wood Coal from the Hearth, like Chacoal half burnt, and made a black Circle there-with on the Hearth-stone, and said, *They believed the Great God, (or Monettay, as they then called him) to be all Eye, that he saw every Thing at once ; and all Ear, that he heard every Thing in like manner ; and all Mind, that he knew all Things, and nothing could be hid from his Sight, Hearing, or Knowledge*. Then I asked, what they thought of the *Devil* ? (or *bad Monettay*, as they call'd him) They said, they did not look upon his Power independant from the *good Monettay*, but that what he did was by *Permission* ; nor indeed did they think he had any Power at all, but what was given or suffered for him to exercise over *Indians*, to bring about some good Designs of the *good Monettay* for their Advantage, to reclaim them when they were bad, and displeased the *good Monettay* : For they believed the *good Monettay* had all Power, yet he employed his Servants or Angels, as we term them, to execute his Will. And the *Indian* that made the Circle, described four several small Circles on the Edge of the great one, and they shewed their Opinion how their little Gods were employed to chastize the *Indians* when bad, and to comfort and encourage them in Good : They likewise supposed the four small Circles to answer to the four Quarters of the World ; that they had Inferiors under them again to execute their Will when they receiv'd a Commission from that *great Mind* ; but that all derived their Power from the *supreme Eye*,

Eye, Ear, and Mind; demonstrating their Meaning by Comparison thus: As supposing the *Indians* bad, the good *Monettay* sees it, and he gives Orders to that in the North, and by him to those under him, whereby we are by hard Frosts, great Snows, and cold Winds in the Winter, very much afflicted with want of Food, and with Cold; and in the Summer, either extream Heat or Wet prevent the Fruits of the Earth from coming to Perfection, until we be made *bumble* and good: Then we pray for Relief, and Commiſſion is given to the *Monettay* in the South, and by him to those under him, whereby we have warm Winds, and pleasant Rains in the Spring, that makes *Yeo-Cod* (meaning Bucks) easy to be taken, and fat, &c. And in the Summer, fruitful good Weather, neither too wet nor too dry.

Thus they account for all reigning Distempers, and common Calamities by Sickneſs or Famine; and on the other Side, Health and Plenty, &c. so in like manner for War and Peace, viz. when two Nations are both wicked, they are *stirred up* to deſtroy each other, either by the *Devil*, or by some of those *Monettays* by him employed, &c.

I then proceeded to query, *what Thoughts they had of a future State after this Life?* first deſiring to have their Opinion, *whether they did not think they had a Part in them that would never die?* which they readily granted, and gave me their Opinion, what both the State of the good and bad *Indians* would be in the other World; that the good *Indians* would go into the South and South Weſt, where it was very warm and pleasant, and Plenty of all Things both for Pleaſure and Profit: As ſuppoſing, that they ſhould have the Delight of enjoying the Comforts of eating, drinking, hunting, and all other Pleaſures they enjoyed here, in a more agreeable way to ſooth and pleaſe their Deſires, than ever they could in this World. Thus they deſcribed *Heaven*, as beſt ſuited their natural Senſes, endeavouring

endeavouring to instil into their Youth, as they said, Principles of Virtue and Justice, that when they die, as to this World, they may be fit and worthy of this good Country or Heaven, where it always is serene and quiet, no Night, nor Winter in this brave pleasant Country; but all Things are plenty, very good, well and comfortable. But then, the *wicked* and *bad Indians*, when they die, go into the North and North West, a Country extream cold, dark and unpleasant; no Sun-shine; they endeavour to get something to satisfy their Hunger, but can't, for the *Yeo-Cod* are very poor, and they can't catch them; so in this Extremity they desire to die, but can't; nor can they find any Means to put an End to this miserable and wretched Life, but they must continue in Sorrow and Trouble without any Hopes of End. Thus they described their Thoughts of a future State, either in Heaven or in Hell, according to their Notions of both.

I then turned my Discourse and asked them, *what they thought of a good Spirit that was present with them in their Minds?* (finding they had no Notion of Christ, as to his bodily Appearance) they readily acknowledged, that a *good Spirit* attended them, and did reprove, or make them sorrowful when they *did badly*: They likewise did believe, the *bad Monettay*, or Devil, did persuade them in their Minds *to Evil*, and the more they strove against the Devil, and prayed for Strength, by and from the good and *great Monettay*, the more they prevailed over these evil and wicked Temptations of the Devil in their own Minds, which had, they said, no Power to lead them into Evil, but by their *own Consent*; nor could do them any Hurt if they did not yield to his alluring and deceitful Temptations. I further enquired, *if all the Indians were much of the same Mind in these Matters?* but they could not resolve me.

I also

I also enquired, *whether any amongst them were look'd upon as Instructors, more than others?* They said, no; but the Head of every Family ought to do their best Endeavours to instruct their Families, but it was neglected; yet they retained the Practice of coming all together once in a Year, and the Elder did advise the Younger, what their Parents and Elders had told them, and thus they transmitted the Knowledge of former Things from one Generation to another, by having them repeated in these Assemblies.

Here our Conference ended: And as I could treat them with some Refreshment, I did, which they thankfully received; and we parted in great Friendship and Love, after a Stay of one Night and almost two Days.

Some Weeks after this, *John Rogers*, a Seventh-day Baptist, from *New-London* in *New-England*, came near two Hundred Miles on purpose to visit me; he was the chief Elder of that Society called by other People *Quaker Baptists*, as imagining (tho' falsely) that both in their Principles and Doctrines they seemed one with us; whereas they differed from us in these material Particulars, *viz.* about the *Seventh-day Sabbath*, and in making Use of Baptism in Water to grown Persons, after the Manner of other *Baptists*, and using the Ceremony of *Bread and Wine* as a Communion, and also of anointing the Sick with Oil: Nor did they admit of the *Light of Truth*, or *Manifestation* of the *Spirit*, but only to Believers; alledging Scripture for the Whole. They bore a noble Testimony against *Fighting*, *Swearing*, *vain Complements*, and the *superstitious* Observation of Days, for which he had endured sundry long Imprisonments, and other very great Sufferings besides, both of Body and Goods. He was a Prisoner when *William Edmundson* was in that Country, (see his Journal Page 90) and had by Sufferings obtained so compleat a Victory over his Opposers, that now they took no Notice of him, he might do and say what he pleased: But he thought himself,

himself, that he had carried his Opposition to the Observation of the *First-day as a Sabbath* a little too far at Times, so that he would do all Sorts of Work, yea, drive Goods or Merchandize of fundry Sorts in a Wheelbarrow, and expose them to Sale before the Pulpit, when the Priest was about the Middle of his Discourse, if he was not hindered, which sometimes, tho' but seldom, happened; and would do any other kind of Labour, letting the People know his Reason for so doing, was to expose their Ignorance and Superstition in observing that Day, which had more of Law than Gospel in it, for Christ was the true Sabbath of Believers; withal adding, *that he was raised up for that very End.* They admitted Women to *Speak* in their Meetings, (believing some qualified by the Gift of the Spirit for that Work) and sometimes they had but very little said in their Meetings, and sometimes they were wholly silent, though not often; for they admitted any one, who wanted Information concerning the meaning of any Text, to put the Question, and it was then expounded and spoken to, as they understood it: Any one being admitted to shew his Dissent, with his Reasons for it: *Thus*, said he, *we improve our Youth in Scripture Knowledge.* I asked him, if they did not sometimes carry their Difference in Sentiments too far to their Hurt? He acknowledged there was Danger in doing so, but they guarded against it as much as they could.

He gave me a large Account of the Conference he had with *William Edmundson*, and told me, that nothing ever gave him so much Trouble and close Uneasiness, as his opposing *William Edmundson* at that Time did, desiring me, if I lived to see *William Edmundson*, to acquaint him with the sincere Sorrow that he had upon his Mind for that Night's Work.

At my Return, I acquainted *William Edmundson* therewith, who desired me, if I lived to see him again, to let him know that it was the Truth *William Edmundson*

Edmundson bore Testimony to that he opposed, and therefore it was no wonder that he was so much troubled.

He also gave me an Account of his Convincement and Conversion, which was very large, and altho' at first it was agreeable and very entertaining, yet by his spinning of it out so long, he made it disagreeable, for he staid with me five or six Days, and it was the greatest Part of his Discourse all that Time, altho' I did sundry Times start other Subjects, which he would soon get off, and go on about his own Experiences.

I query'd, *why he was so very stiff about the Seventh day, and whether, upon a mild Consideration of the Opposition he gave about their Sabbath, it was not by him carried too far?* He acknowledged, that he did not at first see clearly into the true Meaning of the Sabbath, but that the Provocations he met with from the Priest, (who stirred up the People and Mob against him) might sometimes urge him farther than he was afterwards easy with, in opposing them; but when he kept his Place, he had inexpressible Comfort and Peace in what he did; adding, *that the Wrath of Man works not the Righteousness of God.*

I queried with him, *why they kept to the Use of Bread and Wine, and plunging or dipping into Water, since he taught his People to put no Confidence in those Ceremonies, by supposing any Virtue or Holiness in them?* He replied, that they did it for the Sake of those who were weak in Faith; adding, that if our Friends had taken those two Sacraments along with them, they would have driven all before them. This led us into a long Conference, the Substance of which was to the Effect following.

He spoke very much of his Satisfaction and Unity with *George Fox*, *John Stubbs*, *John Burnyeat*, and *William Edmundson*, as the Lord's Servants, with sundry others of the first Visitors of that Country, that he knew them to be sent of God, and that they had carried the

the Reformation farther than any of the *Protestants* ever did before them, since the general Apostacy from the Purity both of Faith and Doctrine; *first*, the Church of *England*, they did nothing in the End but made an *English* Translation of the *Latin* Service used before; the *Presbyterians* they dissented, and the *Independants*, but came not to the Root of the Matter; the *Baptists* dissented from all the other three, but went not through. Upon which, tho' I could not wholly agree with him in his Assertions, I queried, if he thought that all these several Steps of the *English* Church from *Popery*, the *Presbyterians* and *Independants* from the *English* Church, and the *Baptists* from all three of them, had not something of Good in them? *viz.* I mean, whether the first concerned in dissenting from *Popery*, though they afterwards rested too much in the Form of Worship in the *Episcopal* Way, had not the Aid of Christ's Spirit to assist them in their Dissent? and so for all the rest. This he did readily grant to be a great Truth; and so allowing, that the first Reformers were acted by *divine Light*, and being faithful to what was made known to them, had their Reward; and their Successors sat down in that Form their Predecessors left them in; but did not regard that Power and Life by which they were acted, and so became Zealots for that *Form*, but opposed the *Power*. And this, said he, is the true Cause of the several Steps of *Dissent* one from another; and the Reason why there is so little *Christian Love*, and so much Bitterness and Envy one against another, is their setting down contented, each in their *own Form*, without the *Power*, so that they are all in one and the same Spirit, acting their Part in the several Forms of Worship in their own Wills and Time, not only opposing the Spirit of Truth, but making it the *Object* of their Scorn, and those who adhere to it the *Subject* of their Reproach, Contempt, and Envy: And this is the Foundation of Persecution, said he.

But

But we shall, said I, digress too far from what we had in View: Thou allowest the aforementioned Friends to be *Servants of Christ*, and guided by his Word, and that they advanced the Reformation higher than any had done before them; and 'tis plain they had a Concern to lay aside *Fighting, Swearing, vain Compliments*, as well as *Baptism and Bread and Wine*, these *two Sacraments*, as you call them; and as you continue in the Practice of them, it must be in your *own Will*, and not in the Will of God, by thy own Confession.

How dost thou, said he, *make that out?* Thus, said I; *first*, Thou allowest those of our Friends to be true Ministers, and declarest thy Unity with them as such, and they had a Concern to draw Peoples Minds from depending upon these *Shadows* to trust in the *Substance*: Now how could this be so effectually done, as by perswading the People to *discontinue* the Use of those *Shadows*? for whilst they did use them, though at the same Time they were told, there was *nothing in them*, yet weak Minds would still retain some Regard, as though they had some *real* Good in them, when in Truth there *was none*. But if our Friends had a Concern from the Lord *to do this*, how canst thou in Reason suppose, that by the same Spirit you had a Concern from the Lord to *continue* in the Performance of them, unless thou wilt suppose *contradictory* Principles and Doctrines proceed from that good Spirit; which I hope is far from thy Thoughts. *Yea*, said he, *so that is indeed*. Adding, we do not act so, for we say as you do, that *there's nothing in these Ceremonies but a Sign*; it is the Power of an endless Life that we perswade them to seek for *in themselves*, and not to look on these as any Advantage in a spiritual Sense at all. Then, said I, you had better do as we do, *wholly lay them aside*; pray remember the *brazen Serpent* that proved a Snare to *Israel*: But he would not yield to this. Then I asked him, if he thought
either

either of these Ceremonies of more Use than the other? No, replied he; set one aside, and set both, for there is no more Virtue in one than the other.

I then queried with him, if ever he had seen a small Treatise entituled the *Doctrine of Baptisms*, wrote in Cromwell's Time by one William Dell? he never heard of such a Book, he said. I had it by me, and turning to the *Preface*, in the last Paragraph, where the Author in a prophetick Way has these Words, 'But because I see this present Generation so rooted and built up in the Doctrine of Men, I have the less Hope that *this Truth* will prevail with them; and therefore I appeal to the next Generation, which will be farther removed from these Evils, and will be brought nearer to the Word, but especially to that People whom God hath and shall form by his Spirit for himself, for these only will be able to make just and righteous Judgment in this Matter, seeing they have the Anointing to be their Teacher, and the Lamb to be their Light.'

Having read this Paragraph, he took the Book and read it to himself, and was silent until I observed to him, that the Author plainly pointed at *our People*. He allowed there was *Reason* so to think. By this Time it was late, and I desired him to take the Book, read and consider it, and let me have his Thoughts the next Day. So for that Time we parted, and he came not till late in the Afternoon next Day, altho' he lodged hard by the Place of my Confinement. And when he came, told me he had read it carefully, and consider'd it closely, confessing that it was the Language of *the Spirit*, and *true Doctrine*. I told him, now I hoped that he was satisfied, that it was most safe for them to lay these *Shadows* aside, and labour to bring their People to the *Substance*. He allowed that it might be *proper to do so*. But, added he, it must be done with great Care and Tendernefs, lest some should be hurt by it. To which I replied, they would

be more in Danger to be *hurt* by following these *shadowy Observations*, in which they could have no Benefit, and continuing in them might be a Means to lead them into *Superstition* and *Idolatry*, and make them sit down and take their Rest in the *Shadows*, and seek no farther.

Having said what we could, both of us dropt it by Consent; and after some short Pause (for he could not long be silent) we fell on the Subject of *Election* and *Reprobation*, he asserting, that saving Light and Grace was only given to the *Elect*, or *true Believers*, and the rest were *blinded*. I alledged the *contrary*: That an *Offer* of divine Love was made to *all*, but *all* did not make good Use of it: So to Argument we went, and I requested the Reason for his Belief in this Doctrine? desiring him first to explain himself, whether he thought that Reprobates were from their Cradles or Births *so fixed*, that no Means ordained could *alter* them? He paused some Time, and at last said, all Things with God are *possible*; but from the Doctrine of *Paul*, *Rom. ix.* it plainly appears, *says he*, to be so, and that God is glorified by both, as in the Case of *Pharaoh*.

I replied, *Pharaoh's* Case could not properly be adapted to this Doctrine, because it was in itself peculiarly intended for the *convincing* of the *Egyptians*, as well as the *rest* of Mankind; that he (God) was the only *All Powerful God*, worthy of Obedience, and that the Life and Power of Kings was in him; and to confirm that weak People the *Jews*, that if they leaned upon *that God* who had done all this before their Eyes, they needed not to fear the *Wrath of Kings*, though accompanied with *strong and numerous Armies*; for God, who had chosen them, could soon overthrow their Enemies, and save them by a mighty Deliverance from their Rage and Wrath: But how this can be brought to support *Election* and *Reprobation* as now it's understood, and preach'd up by sundry pretended Teachers,

Teachers, *I see not* : I therefore desire that thou wouldst explain it as thou understands it.

He then proceeded as follows ; first calling for the Book, and turning to the Text, *Rom. ix.* he began at the 10th Verse, and went on, expounding very strongly and undeniably, in his own View, to the 21st Verse, continuing his Exposition to an uncommon Length ; all which I heard with a profound Silence, and he became silent too at last, and we sat in Silence some Time, and then I spoke to the Effect following : That as it appeared to me, the 22d Verse took off much of the Edge of what he had said with respect to *Reprobation* ; which I read, and he confest it did pretty much so. I farther added, that the Doctrine of *Election* and *Reprobation*, in the Way it is now expounded by thee, is very injurious, in reflecting on the infinite Mercy of God, and point blank *opposing* the chief End of the Gospel, and Coming of our Saviour, *who tasted Death for every Man*, and offers Life by his good Spirit and Grace *to all*. Besides, thy Way of expounding the Apostle in this Epistle, makes him quite contradict himself in other Places, where he clearly sets forth the Love of God by and through Christ, to be *universally* offered to both *Jews* and *Gentiles*, in order to Salvation : And last of all, as thou hast explained thyself now upon this Doctrine, thou *renders* that great Duty of Prayer almost *impertinent*, if not quite *useless*, with all other *religious Endeavours*, &c. so that if thou canst not make it out otherwise than this is, I may, I think, without any Breach of Charity, conclude thee *unsound* in thy Faith and Doctrine of the Gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ, *who died for all Men*, and was by his Apostles preach'd the Saviour of the World to both *Jews* and *Greeks* : Therefore we must expound *Paul* in *Rom. ix.* after another Manner, so as to reconcile *Paul* with himself, where he plainly shews, God *wills all Men* to be saved, and to come to the Knowledge of the Truth, as in the second of the first

of *Timothy*, and abundantly elsewhere, that we have already touched upon: But if thou wilt give me Leave, without Interruption, I will give thee my Thoughts on this Subject, which in short are these, *viz.*

It is beyond all Doubt or Question with me, that God *wills all Men to be saved*; and to compleat his Will, and Offers of Salvation to all, he has ordained the Means to *procure* the End by his own Son, who tasted Death *for every Man*, whereby *all* have it put into their Power, as free Agents, to make Choice for themselves, by applying to the Means ordained by God, thro' his Son our Lord Jesus Christ, for the *obtaining* that which he has *willed for them*, *viz.* Salvation! Now if this is true, as the Scriptures assert, and our own Experience confirms it to ourselves, then it follows, that *all* who are diligent, through the *Obedience* of Faith, endeavouring to make their Calling and Election sure, by applying to the Means ordained of God, (*viz.* that Grace and Truth that is come by Jesus Christ) for the obtaining that which he has *willed for them*, as I have said, we may safely conclude *all* in this State, to be the Elect of God in Christ. But then *all*, who contrary to this, neglect and slight, nay, suffer me to say, *rebel* against the inward Convictions of Grace and Truth in their own Minds, (which is the *only* Guide and Rule for doing better) and continue herein until they are left and harden'd in their Sins and Wickedness, being given up to a reprobate Mind, having their Consciences seared as with an hot Iron, are past *feeling* of any Remorse for their ungodly Deeds. These I take to be in a *Reprobate Condition*, and this Reprobation is *of themselves*, they having *chosen* it; for they had the Offers of the same Grace and Truth to assist them to do better, as the Elect have had, but would not apply themselves thereto, but did wilfully *reject* it. Now all this thou knowest may be fairly proved by the Scriptures, and thou canst, I think, do no otherwise than allow it to be *conclusive* to decide
this

this Point ; for 'tis plain, the first are the Children of God, made so by their *co-working* with the Spirit of Christ ; and the other are Reprobates and Children of Antichrist, made so by *their Rebellion* against the Spirit of Truth, and *Obedience* to the Spirit of Error : And here I conclude with the Apostle's Words, *Rom. ix. 22. What if God, willing to shew his Wrath, and to make his Power known, endured with much long-suffering the Vessels of Wrath (by their own Rebellion) fitted to Destruction ?*

Here we closed up the Discourse ; and now I shall go on with my Imprisonment and Clearing from the same.

About the Beginning of the Eighth Month 1703, the Sheriff had an Order to call or warn eighteen Men for a Jury, to try their Success a second Time : But whether they went upon the old Indictment or a new one, I could not understand, but it was thought by some of the last Jury, to be the same Indictment that the first Jury went upon ; but I was never admitted so see it: The Sheriff had private Instructions to get such Men put into the Jury, as they thought would answer their End, which he shewed me with *Abhorrence*, assuring me, he would never do it ; so the Jury was fairly named, and they made no great Matter about it, but in a short Time (as their Predecessors had done before them) they came in with their Bill, signed *Ignoramus* ; which gave some of the Lawyers Cause to say, in a jocular Way, they were got into an *Ignoramus Country*.

This was on the second Day of the Ninth Month, and the Court adjourned to the next Day, at which Time I was had into Court ; which I was told, was not regular nor lawful to bring a Man to the Bar that had nothing laid to his Charge by his Peers, the grand Inquest ; however, I was asked, *If I had any Thing to offer to the Court ?* I desired my Liberty, and Reparation for the Wrong done me in taking it from me, &c. The Judge told me, *I might have my Liberty, paying my Fees.* I replied, that I was informed there

were no Fees due, as the Case then was, according to Law ; but if there had, I should not pay any, it being to me a Matter of Conscience. The Judge said, *He believed so*, and smiled, speaking something to those near him, which was not heard by me : However I was set as Liberty by Proclamation ; and a large Body of my dear Friends, from all Parts of the Island, came to see me Cleared, and had me away with them in a kind of Triumph, not being a little glad that I came off so honourably ; and even the Country People who were not Friends, were there in abundance, and rejoiced exceedingly at my Enlargement.

I was now at Liberty, after having been a Prisoner one Year wanting three Weeks and about two Days ; but having not Freedom to go away, I staid some Time, visiting every Corner of the Island, and had very large and open Meetings : The People were thoroughly alarmed, so that I found by Experience, that my long Imprisonment had made me more popular and regarded, so that they flocked in great Numbers to where I was, and Friends were careful that they should have Notice.

A Meeting being appointed for me at a Place called *Cowneck*, at one *Jacob Doughty's* (there not having been any at that Place before) as I lay in Bed at my dear Friend *John Rodman's* at the *Bay-side* the Night before, I dreamt that an honest Friend was fishing in a large Stone Cistern, with a crooked Pin for his Hook, a small switch Stick for his Rod, and a Piece of Thread for his Line ; and *George Fox* came and told me, that there were three Fishes in that Place, and desired me to take the Tackling of the Friend, for that he wanted Skill to handle the Matter : Accordingly, methought he (the Friend) gave me the Rod, and the first Time that I threw in I caught a fine Fish : *George Fox* bid me try again, for there were two more in that Place ; I did, and took up another ; He bid me cast in my Hook once more ; I did, and took the Third : Now, said *George*, *there is no more there.*

there. This Dream was taken from me as if I had not dreamt at all. The next Day we went to the Meeting, and were a little late, by reason the Tide and high Fresh-water obliged us to ride the farthest Way, and when we came into Meeting a Friend was preaching on *universal Grace*; but in a little Time he left off, and my Heart being full of the Matter, I took it up, and we had a blessed powerful Meeting, and all ended well.

I returned with my Friend *Rodman* to his House, and in our Way my Dream came fresh into my Memory, and that Evening I told it to my Friend *Rodman*, and gave him a Description of *George Fox's* Features and Bulk, as he appeared to me; and he said, I had a very just and right Apprehension of him. He had been much with *George Fox* when he was in *Barbadoes*, and was well acquainted with him; adding, this remarkable Dream shews some Good done there * *this Day*. • There's a large Meeting since settled there.

Now after I was clear of *Long-Island*, (it being just with me as if I had been to set out from Home) I found it of Necessity to convene the Elders, and lay before them my Concern, as I did when I came from Home; and in a tender and fatherly Way they took care to examine what I might be in need of, both with respect to Linen, Woolen, Pocket Money, and a Horse; for as yet I had not bought one, never finding Freedom so to do: But Friends, to their Praise be it spoken, assisted me from Stage to Stage, and when I was in Prison I saw I had no want of a Horse, and admired the Kindness of Providence in restraining me from having one till wanted: And I had Money plenty by the Trade of *Shoe-making*, so that I wanted none, nor did I want any Necessaries for the Journey but a Companion, and then sundry offered themselves very freely to travel with me: But my dear Friend *Samuel Bowne* had a Concern to visit the Eastern Parts of *New-England*, who had a fine Gift, but not very large; I was

very glad of his Company, so we set forward in the Beginning of the Twelfth Month, and the Winter not being broke up, we rode over the Ice in sundry Places in *Connecticut* Colony, some narrow and some broad Rivers, *New-London* the biggest, but we had no Meetings for near two Hundred Miles: The People being mostly rigid *Presbyterians*, counted it a great Crime to be at a *Quakers* Meeting, especially on the Sabbath-day, as they term the First-day of the Week. But coming into *Narraganset*, we were amongst Friends again. So we went for *Rhode-Island*, and there Friends were very numerous, and we had large Meetings indeed: There was a Marriage of a young Man (his Name was *Richardson*) with a Daughter of *Thomas Rodman*, a Man of the first Rank in the Island, so that we had the Governor (his Name was *Samuel Cranston*) and most of the chief Men in the Government at the Marriage, and we had a precious living Time, which gave me great Encouragement. The Governor was very kind, and queried with me about my Imprisonment; he was a great Lover of Friends, but not a profest one himself.

From *Rhode-Island* we went pretty strait towards *Hampton* and *Dover*, having some Meetings, but few, by reason we purposed to return to the Yearly-Meeting in *Rhode-Island*.

When we came to *Dover* we had a pretty large Meeting, but we were both silent; at which I was somewhat amazed, it being new to me: However, another Meeting was appointed next Day, some little Distance from *Dover*, which was much larger: My Companion said something, but very little, and was uneasy that he had said any thing: I was quite shut up; and after Meeting I was exceedingly comforted, being filled with divine Sweetness and heavenly Joy, that I was preserved, and did not force myself to offer. They appointed another Meeting the Day following, some Distance off, at which I found myself quite shut up,

up, and held back as it were from saying any thing, and my Companion was also silent, who after Meeting look'd upon me very innocently, saying, Samuel, *What dost think these People will say, that we should come so far to appoint Meetings amongst them, and have nothing to say?* It just then livingly came into my Mind to reply, *Fear not, have Faith, nothing doubting but we shall have enough to say before we leave them.*

Our next Meeting was to be in the Center of the Meetings which we had before, in a considerable large House, but not big enough for the Company by far, and the Country was all alarmed, so that it was a very large Meeting indeed ; and it being War Time with the *Indians*, the People brought such Weapons as they had to Meeting, so that when we came to the Meeting-house, I was surprized to see so many Fire-Arms, and other Instruments of War, standing against the Meeting-house Wall. However, I was before told, that it was the Custom of other People to do so ; and I found that those Fire-Arms, and Warlike Weapons belonged to other People, not Friends, that were come to Meeting : A large Meeting it was indeed, and very quiet ; we sat a long Time in Silence, which put me on examining my Conduct, and looking back to see how it was with me ; but finding no Cause of Uneasiness from any Thing I had done before, to cause me to be thus shut up, I came to this Conclusion and Resignation, that *I was but a Servant, and could of myself do nothing* ; secretly praying that the Lord would give me Patience not to be uneasy, if he had nothing for me to do, and if he had, there I was ready and willing to do it : And thus I settled down, diligently waiting for divine Direction. In a little Time a Word came with Life, (and I stood up with it) to the Effect following : ' The Lord's Time is the best Time, and let us not grow uneasy to wait for it ; for ' when he opens none can shut, and when he shuts none ' can open.' Enlarging on this Subject a little more ;
and

and we had a very glorious Meeting, in which I was largely opened in sundry Branches of the Doctrine of Christ ; and I had not seen very often greater Tender-ness than was at that Time amongst the People ; for the War with the *Indians* had humbled them to such a degree, that Truth had a very great Reach upon them indeed, and the Meeting ended well.

Immediately I found an uncommon and weighty Concern to request the Ministers to come together, which they very readily complied with, and they were an handsome Number, but not all thoroughly baptized into the Work. My Companion was very prettily opened, and we had a very suitable Service amongst them, and saw clearly the Reason why we were so shut up in Silence ; some of them were got into an *Extream* in Preaching and Praying, and would continue Meetings to an unseasonable Length, as likewise in their Preaching and Praying at Table ; which gave great Uneasiness to some sensible Friends amongst them, but they could not redress it till after this Opportunity. They themselves saw they were wrong in doing as they had done, and got out of this Extream, which was a Degree of *Ranterism*, being attended with a Spirit of Opposition against the Order of Friends in Monthly and Quarterly-meetings.

Having finished our Service, we returned back to *Hampton*, and had several Meetings, and so for *Rhode-Island* Yearly-meeting, which was very large, and to good Satisfaction.


From thence I went by Sea to several Islands, as *Martha's Vineyard*, *Nantucket*, and some others ; but in *Nantucket* I had great Satisfaction, for the People, not joined with Friends, were moderate *Baptists*, and came generally to Meetings, their Preacher also with them, who after Meeting raised some Objections against us, that he had from our Adversaries Books, and that which he pitch'd upon mostly was about Prayer, that *we did not pray to God in the Name of Christ, but in our*

own Names. I told him, we look'd upon it to be our Duty to pray to God in Christ's Name, and as his Name is understood to be *his Power*, we durst not presume to pray to the Father, but as the Wisdom and Spirit of Christ gave us Utterance. He said, *it was a Gospel Truth in its primitive Purity.*

The Governor also sent for me, and we confer'd together about our Principles, and after a little Time he seemed much pleased with what I had to say: And, now having finished my Service I returned to *Rhode-Island*, and found some were contriving to have me taken up, by informing the Governor against me, as tho' I was a Transgressor, by preaching, as they said, against *Baptism*, and the *Supper of the Lord*, as they call the Bread and Wine. But the Governor being at the Meeting himself where this supposed Offence was given, quickly saw that the Arguments used against the present Practice of the *English Church*, as well as *Presbyterians* and *Baptists*, had so much Scripture and Reason on their Side, that it was vain to attempt to confute them; he therefore thought it their wisest Way to let it alone.

After this I made another Trip to the Eastward, my dear Companion being returned, and visited in my Way back to *Dover*, Meetings as they came in course; and I visited all the Meetings where I had been before, and had sat in Silence in some of them, but I had now large and good Service, and great Satisfaction amongst them, and the more so, as they now saw it their Places not to preach in every Meeting, but to wait for the Constraint of the divine Word before they spoke.

From thence I went to *Strawberry-bank*, a Haven where much Shipping resort for Masts; and when clear of those Parts returned to *Hampton*, *Haverill*, *Exeter*, and sundry other Towns where Meetings had not been kept, and amongst them to *Newbury*: A Man that lived in this Place, being newly convinced, was very desirous
ot



of a Meeting at his House, which I consented to; and when the Time came, his Wife, not being pleased that we came on the Account of a Meeting, would not permit us to enter the House, but kept the Doors lock'd against us, being, as was said, advised to it by some of their Teachers. I took a Turn round the House, and happened to have some Conference with her at the Window, first assuring her, that we had no Design to put her Husband to any manner of Charge, but only to let us have House-room for about two Hours to hold a Meeting; adding, that it did ill become a Wife to keep her Husband out of his House at such a Time; promising her, that if she would let in her Husband, not one of our People should come in with him. And by thus reasoning the Case, she, after a little while, opened the Door and would have us to go in, but I had not Freedom. Then the Place to hold the Meeting was got ready, being a large Place like a Barn, where the Friend and his Men built Boats for the Shipping, that being his Calling, and we sat down, being a few Friends, but in a little Time many People came in, amongst whom, as it was said, were six Preachers: And in some convenient Time a young Woman stood up who had a pretty Gift, but the People behaved very rudely, so that it put the poor Girl out of Countenance, and she sat down. Then stood up one *Lydia Norton*, a famous Minister, none more so of that Country, and indeed she had an excellent Gift, and knew how to conduct herself in it; but all this did not avail, the People grew worse and worse in their Behaviour; and *Lydia* having a very strong manly Voice, extended it very loud, but all to no purpose, for the People were as loud as she, calling for a Dram, and sporting themselves in their Folly, so she sat down; and a young Man, called *Josbua Puddington*, stood up: They were rude to the Women, but worse with him, raking up his former Faults, and calling for a Cann of Flip, *for he could drink as*
well

well as they, they said : And he having been a Companion with them in fishing, they made very free with him, so he shut up.

By this Time the Meeting was exceeding numerous, and continued enlarging very much : And it came into my Mind, to stand up and take out my Bible, which I did, (for I always travelled with one in those Days, finding a considerable Service in it at times) and open'd it, and put my Finger into it, as though I would take my Text, but I said nothing for some considerable Time, till all was quiet, for the People continued in great Confusion for a while, till some of them observed my Book ; then they began to quiet and still one another, urging as a Reason for it, that *I had the Word of God in my Hand*, such a great Regard they paid to my Bible ; and in a little Time all was quiet and still : Then I open'd my Mouth and said, *Behold I am an Englishman* ; and enumerated the many Lands and Places I had travell'd in, but had never met with any People of such a Behaviour as these were ; referring to them to advise me, *what Account I must give of the People of Newbury at my Return into England* ?

A good comely Gentleman-like Man, in Excuse for the Behaviour of the People, said, Sir, *as for Womens Preaching we hold it unlawful, because St. Paul hath forbid it, therefore we think it not proper to give them a bearing : And as for the Man, we know him perhaps better than you, and can't think him qualified for that Undertaking ; but you seem to be a Gentleman of Sense, and we will hear you.* I replied, that as for *Womens Preaching*, it is allowed a disputable Point from *Paul's Words*, yet nevertheless, if any of you are, (after this Meeting is over) willing to hear what I have to say in Favour of it, I shall be willing to give you the best Account I can, why I think it is *lawful* : And if any of you can shew better Reasons against it, I shall as willingly hear them. And as
for

for the young Man, I grant you may, as he is a Neighbour, have had a much better Knowledge of his former Conduct in Life, than I can pretend to ; but allowing that he may have, in Time past, been loose, that argues not against giving him a Hearing : For how know you, but that as *Saul* did, he might condemn his past Life, and give you an Example, by his present Conduct, to *reform* ; for which Reasons you ought to have heard with Patience what he had to say to you.

The same Gentleman replied, *I said very right, they ought to have heard him : But I pray you speak what you have to say freely ; and I charge all present to make no Disturbance or Interruption ; if they do, in the Queen's Name I will commit them.* By which Words I found he was in the Commission of the Peace : And then I began, ' That Religion without Righteousness was ' uselefs, and could not profit those who profest it.' And going on, I came in the Course of my Service to recite the great Improvement true Religion made on the Minds of those who lived in it, in giving them Power over their Lusts and Passions ; repeating that of *James* i. 26. *If any Man among you seem to be religious, and bridletb not his Tongue, but deceiveth his own Heart, this Man's Religion is vain.* One out of the Throng said, *Sir, you impose upon us, there's no such Text.* I made a full Stop, and turned to it ; and there were many Bibles then appeared. I repeated Chapter and Verse, and they turned to it. Then I asked them, *if they had it ?* They replied, *they had.* Then I read both the 26th and 27th Verses, and asked, *if it was so in their Bibles ?* They answered that it was. I then desired them to consider, whether I that repeated the Text, or he that said there was no such Text, was *most in the right.*

Then I went on with my Opening, carefully minding my Guide ; and in the Course of the Doctrine I had in my View, I came to treat of *Faith*, and distinguished

distinguished between *true* and *false* Faith, shewing, that notwithstanding we might give our Assent to the Truth of that called the *Apostles Creed*, or any other made and drawn up by Men, and that we might be zealous to dispute and contend for the Truth of these Creeds, in the wording Part of them ; yet for all that, if we did not lead *Christian Lives*, we were still but *Unbelievers* ; for *Faith without Works is dead*, the Text tells us. At which last Words one cries out, *You impose upon us, there's no such Text*. I immediately stop'd, and turn'd to it, and quoted it, and they all who had Bibles made Search. There being a profound Silence, I read the Text, asking, *if it was so in their Books* ? They all replied, *it was*. I made the same Remark as before ; and then I went on, distinguishing between *true* and *false* Faith, plainly demonstrating from Scripture, that Faith was much different from what many took it to be. And indeed Truth was eminently preached that Day, and there was a considerable Tenderness amongst the People, and the Meeting ended well.

When I came out, the Gentleman came to me, and I acknowledged his Kindness towards us ; and it suddenly came before me to speak with a loud Voice in the Street, and to desire, that if any one was at a Loss, and did not understand any Part of what I had said, or thought I had spoken any Thing not agreeing with Scripture, I would then desire them to let me know it, and not misrepresent any Thing I had said when I was gone. The Gentleman made Answer on Behalf of the People thus : *None can have any Objection, for I never heard the Word better preached in my Time*. And then I told them I was ready to let them know my Reasons, why I thought Women, properly and duly qualified, might preach *lawfully*, on condition I might have their Reasons to the contrary. The Gentleman, who undertook still to speak on Behalf of the Company (who

staid

staid to hear and see) said, *Here is none here will undertake to dispute with you upon this or any other Point of Religion: But I desire you will favour me with a Promise to have another Meeting here, and I will get some of the best Writers the Country will afford, to take down your Sermon.* But he little knew, that this was no great Inducement to my coming there again: However, he prest it very close, which I excused in the best manner I could; as not knowing that I should or should not: And after some earnest pressing of me to go to his House to refresh myself, which I likewise desired to be excused in, by reason we gave Expectation to go to our Inn, and we could not stay much longer, because Night would come upon us; we parted in good Respect and Harmony to all Appearance, and my Heart was filled with Thankfulness and Comfort that we got over that Day's Work so well.

Now being clear of these Parts I returned, visiting the Meetings of Friends, and sundry other Places, as in particular *Cape-Ann*, where I met with great Opposition; the Case was thus.

At *Cape-Ann* sundry Friends were desirous of a Meeting, and more so, because that several young Men who were Friends, resided there while they built a Ship. Accordingly I went, and several Friends with me, and we got there early on a Seventh-day, and gave Notice of a Meeting, which was to good Satisfaction, and it being a new Thing, it was very large; the People desired another, which was granted: And between Meetings, some gave their Preacher Notice, who had but a small Congregation that Day, advising him to look after his Flock, it being his Duty. Accordingly he came before the Meeting ended, with several of his Elders, and was very noisy. First, he would prove *Water Baptism*, from the Text, to be an *Ordinance* of Christ. I queried, what *Form* of Water Baptism would he prove so? To which he answered evasively, not being willing to be tied to one more than another.

But

But after some farther *Pro's* and *Con's*, he was by his own People prest to vindicate his own Practice, which was *Sprinkling*. Then he said, that was plainly proved by our Saviour's Words, *Suffer little Children to come unto me*, &c. I shewed him his Mistake; that without perverting that Text, it could not be applied to *sprinkling* of Infants in any wise: But our Saviour's Words in that Place referred to the State of *Innocency* that such should experience, to be like little Children in their Minds, as free from all manner of Vice and Wickedness, before they were fit and prepared for the Kingdom of Heaven, which *sprinkling* with *elementary Water* could not do for them. Opening more at large the State of the *New Birth* and *Regeneration*; in doing which he would often break in upon me, but his own People cried *Shame*, for the Interruption he gave, adding, *when I had done, he should be heard*. But he was so much out about the Proof of *sprinkling* Infants by our Saviour's Words, that I found he was very weary of the Dispute, and willing to drop it, and would go on upon *Perfection*. I urged him to clear up *Baptism* first, as we were upon it; but he would break off from it, urging, that both he and his People were satisfied about it. I then asked him, *why he did begin upon it?* To shew us our Errors, *he replied*. So finding nothing was like to come of it, but Tumult and Noise, we press'd it no farther.

Then he charged us with being in *an Error* about *Perfection*. I desired to know, *wherein?* He was very unwilling to shew *wherein*, and flew off to *Election*; in short he would stick to nothing. So that one of his Hearers reproved him very sharply, for his abounding in so many Charges of *supposed Errors*, and proving nothing; adding, that it did not suit his Station as a Minister, whose Work it was, or ought to be, to set People to rights, and to shew them *wherein* they were *wrong*, and not to heap up Charges of Errors, without shewing of any thing of Proof that

H

they

they were so, which could by no means be a Way to convince and inform those in Error. At which pertinent Rebuke he left us, some, though very few, going with him.

I then desired the People to sit down, and be still ; which they readily complied with ; and after a short Pause, it was with me briefly to speak to each Point, explaining, as well as I could, in so short a Time, the Doctrine of outward Baptism to be but a Figure of the *Inward*, as outward Circumcision was of the *Inward*, viz. of the Heart : And likewise setting forth the *New Birth* and *Regeneration* in as clear a Light as Time would permit ; with *Perfection* and *Election*, and *Reprobation* ; all which, though but very briefly touch'd upon, took up a considerable Time, so that the Night was above half spent considerably. When I had done, the People were exceeding quiet and civil, and declared their Satisfaction, wishing their Minister had likewise staid, for he could not have gainsaid what was spoken to each Point. Some few of them staid a short Time after, desiring that they might have more such Meetings, and we parted in much Love and Sweetness ; in particular, that Elder who reprehended the Minister, as he call'd him, said, *Religion could never prosper, so long as it was made a Trade of to get Bread by* ; and he seemed convinced, that both the Doctrine and Practice of their People were *inconsistent* with primitive Religion and our Saviour's Doctrine. And thus we closed our Conference and took Leave.

From thence I returned towards *Rhode-Island*, taking my Leave, as not expecting to see them again this Journey.

I went from *Rhode-Island* to *Block-Island*, where there were a few Friends, but much hurt by lewd Company, such as Privateers Men and the like, but all the Inhabitants came to the Meeting, and were very sober and willing to hear. *Ebenezer Slocum*, a fine Minister, was with me in this Island, and we had
three

three or four Meetings among them : Then I returned to *Rhode-Island* again, and was at two large Meetings with Friends, and took my solemn Leave ; I also had a Meeting in *Connecticut*, at which were many Friends from both *Rhode-Island* and *Naraganset* ; and a fine solid Meeting it was. Then I went to *Naraganset*, and had two or three Meetings there, and took my Leave and came to *New-London*, and so for *Long-Island*, and at the East End of it had some Meetings, where both Friends and others were very glad of my Coming. I had many Meetings in several other Places, and there was great flocking to Meetings, and very great Openness amongst the People in those Parts.

A Friend told me, that *George Keith* had proposed, as a Means to prevent the Growth of *Quakerism*, as he call'd it, *The making of a Law to restrain Friends from Travelling, save to their own Meetings ; for, he said, it was the travelling Preachers that kept the Quakers up so strong in Countenance.* This was thought by some hot Biggots a likely Way to put a Stop to the Increase of the *Quakers*, who had infected almost the whole Country ; but by People of Moderation and Sense it was hiss'd at. But to the Matter ; There was a very large Meeting at *Westbury on the Plain*, called a Yearly-meeting, to which most of the Friends of the Island, and many of the better Sort of the West End of it came, it being known that I should take my Leave there ; and I was very much opened, in setting forth the Difference between the true and false Ministers, and the true and false Worship ; and there being some of *Keith's* Friends, they threatned to have me taken up again ; but I found that Truth was over them, and they could do no more than shew their Teeth, for they could not bite.

After this Meeting I left the Island, and went into the *Ferseys* by *Stratan-Island* to *Woodbridge*, *Shrewsbury*, *Crosswicks*, and back to *Egg-harbour*, visiting Friends, and so back to *Philadelphia* to the Yearly-meeting,

which was very large, and I had good Satisfaction in being there. Here sundry of my dear Friends from *Long-Island* met me, in particular, my dear Friend *Samuel Bowne* and his worthy Wife, who was a good Mother in *Israel*; with this good Woman I left fifteen Pounds to defray some Charges my good Friends had been at about my Imprisonment, for Chamber Rent, and a Present they made the Keeper, which I was unwilling to have them pay, having Money plenty, that I earned in Prison by making of Shoes: But my dear Friends would not permit it, but return'd it me by *Samuel Bowne*, who used so many Arguments, that it did not look well for them to suffer it, by reason it would be a Reproach on them, and look as though I did not count them worthy to treat me as a Minister; so rather than bring an Uneasiness upon my Brethren, I took it again.

From *Philadelphia* I accompanied these my Friends going on their Way Home, about thirty Miles, as far as *Crosswicks*, visiting that Meeting and *Burlington*, took my Leave there and came to the *Falls* Meeting, and so visited all the Meetings on that Side of the River, down through the *Welsh* Towns to *Philadelphia*; and taking my Leave there also, went to *Concord* and *Chester*, visiting sundry Meetings, making towards *Maryland*.

A *Welsh* Friend, named *Ellis Pugh*, who proposed to come over with me to visit his Friends in *Wales*, was now with me, and we came into *Maryland*, and took our Passage Home with a Friend, whose Name was *Daniel Maud*, but he could not be ready to sail under two Months; so my Companion returned to his Family, and I visited *Virginia* and *Carolina*, and had good Satisfaction. I took my Leave and returned to the Ship, and found my dear Friend *Ellis Pugh* labouring among Friends in *Maryland*. In a little Time the Ship fell down the Bay to *Kickatan*, where the Fleet made up, waiting for Convoy, and in a few Weeks the Fleet

Fleet came together, being very large ; but many Ships had taken so great Damage by staying so long in the Country, that they could not bear the Sea, and several foundered, and some put back to unload, and have their Ships repair'd. We had a long Passage but arrived safe, landing at *Portsmouth* in the Tenth Month 1706, and visited only a small Meeting at *Portsmouth* and took Coach for *London*, where I staid to visit the Meetings in the City, and afterwards went down to *Wiltshire* Quarterly-meeting, where was some Uneasiness amongst Friends, but happily it was reconciled.

I then went into *Somersetshire* to visit my Friend, being under an Engagement of Marriage to her, as before hinted, where I staid a few Weeks, and visited sundry Meetings in that Neighbourhood, and so for *Bristol*, where I staid a Week or ten Days, then went pretty directly into the North, which I called my Home, and glad I was to be amongst my old Friends again.

Having visited the Meetings in our own Country, and delivered up my Certificate, giving an Account of my Travels, at the next Monthly-meeting I acquainted Friends with my intended Marriage, having a few Lines from under my intended Wife's Hand, as likewise from her Parents, shewing all their Consent. And I desired a Certificate from the Meeting, and Persons were appointed, as is usual in the like Case, to make Enquiry of my Clearness : And in the Interim the Quarterly-meeting for *Cumberland* happened to be at *Carlisle*, whither I went. The Meeting was exceeding large, and I had great Satisfaction in being there. I visited a few Meetings in *Cumberland*, but was limited for Time, being obliged to be at the next Monthly-meeting to have my Certificate to present in *Somersetshire*, in order to proceed towards my Marriage.

By this Time the Spring was advanced, and my worthy Friend *James Wilson* offered his Company to go to my Marriage ; accordingly we set forward, and

took in our Way the Yearly - meeting at *Middlewich*, which was very large, and sundry weighty Friends were there : I had great Satisfaction and Comfort in being there. So we took Meetings, as they suited, in our Way : And I found my Companion under a great Concern to speak something in Meetings, but very backward and loath to give up to it ; but I gave him what Encouragement I could : And in *Tewkesbury* Meeting, after some Struggle in himself, he stood up, and appeared very much to his own, and Friends Comfort, and so in every Meeting after till we came to *Bristol* ; and indeed he appeared more like an Elder in the Work than a Babe. But at *Bristol* he did not get through what he had before him to his liking, and sat down under very great Discouragement, but I cheered him up as well as I could, by giving him an Account of my own Experiences : And when we came to the little Country Meetings again, he did finely, and gathered Strength and Experience in the Work very fast.

We came to my intended Father-in-Law's House, and went to their Monthly meeting, where I and my Friend proposed our intended Marriage, which was taken Notice of. And then *Bristol* Yearly - meeting coming on, we went thither, and met our worthy Friend *Thomas Camm*, who intended to be at our Marriage. After the Yearly - meeting was over at *Bristol*, *Thomas Camm* took a Meeting or two in the Way, but my Friend *James* and I returned back, in order for me to get clear of the Monthly-meeting, and likewise to provide ourselves Necessaries for the Wedding, which was to be accomplished the Week following, at a Meeting on purpose at *Puddimore*, and it was a very large Meeting, sundry Publick Friends besides *Thomas Camm* being there.

The Yearly-meeting at *London* coming on, I staid but a few Days with my Wife ; I would have had her gone with me, but her Mother was taken ill of a

Feaverish

Feaverish Disorder, and was very weak, for which Reason she was not easy to go ; so I was obliged to leave her to nurse her Mother, who in a few Days grew much better, but I had first a sweet Opportunity with the Family, and one or two Friends more in her Chamber, and the Spirit of Prayer came on *James*, and he was drawn forth very largely, and very devoutly. After which (not without some considerable Reluctance) we parted for a short Time, and *James* and I set out for *London*, and that Meeting was very large, and Friends there were willing I should give some Account of my Travels, which I was much afraid of ; but being call'd upon in the Meeting, I did it, and came off much better than I expected ; sundry Friends expressing their Approbation of it.

As soon as the Meeting was over, dear *James* and I had a heavy Parting ; but as I was going to my Wife, it helped to cheer my Heart a little. I came directly Home without taking any Meeting, having my dear Friend *James Salter*, and sundry others who had been at the Yearly-meeting, in Company. And now I staid with my dear Wife, and went very little abroad for more than twelve Months, having very great Comfort and Satisfaction in my married State, my Wife being a true Sympathizer with me in all the Exercises which I often was under, of one kind or another ; as sometimes I fear'd *how we should go on in the World* ; and she would often say, if we get but little, we will spend less ; and if we save a little out of our Gettings, we shall do well enough, I am not at all fearful of it, neither would I have thee. Then I was jealous that my Ministry was not so living as it had been before I was married ; and making my Trouble and Uneasiness about it known to my Wife, she would endeavour to dissuade me from such Thoughts, adding, there was no Reason for it ; so that I found her to be a Help-meet indeed.

Then finding a Concern to visit *Ireland*, I acquainted her therewith, and she gave me up so freely and chearfully, that it was like a Cordial to me ; saying, that she expected I would often leave her, and that she had resolved in herself before Marriage, she would never hinder my Ministry if she could possibly avoid it, and she hoped that the Lord would strengthen her, and make that easy to her.

So accordingly about the Fifth Month 1708, I applied to the Monthly-meeting for a Certificate, which I had, and then took Shipping at *Minehead*, and landed at *Cork*, where I staid two or three Meetings to good Satisfaction : Then I went to *Charlewill* and *Limerick*, visiting the Meetings along that Side of the Nation to *Colrain*, and I found very hard Work in many Places, and in some Meetings was quite shut up ; but I found, where the People who did not profess with us came in plentifully, it was not so, but there was an open Door ; and that worthy Friend, and heavenly-minded, meek, and divine Preacher, *Gilbert Thompson*, was there at the same Time ; and when we conversed about it, I found he was, much as I was, shut up, and found it very hard Work in some Places to get forward ; and as he was in Experience and Age much my Superior, I requested what he thought might be the Reason, *why it seemed more dead amongst Friends in this Nation now, than in some other Places ?* He gave this as a Reason, *That the Professors of Truth in that Nation were very strict and exact in some Things, and placed much in outward Appearance, but too much neglected the Reformation and Change of the Mind, and having the Inside thoroughly cleansed from Pride and Iniquity ; for thou knowest*, said he, *the Leaven of the Pharisees was always hurtful to the Life of Religion in all Shapes.* Yet nevertheless we found a brave living People in that Nation, and great Encouragement there was to visit fresh Places.

I came

I came from *Colrain* to *Lurgan*, *Mount-Allen*, and sundry small Meetings thereabout, as *Hilborough*, *Lisborn*, *Raffer-Island*, and so to *Drogheda*, Friends having a Meeting house in that Town, but few came to Meeting, there being no Friends in the Town, except two Men. From thence I went for *Dublin*, then visited the Meetings towards *Wicklow*, *Waterford*, and so to *Cork*, and had a large Meeting at *Kinsale*, it being the first Meeting in the Meeting-house that Friends had built there. Friends in that Kingdom are highly to be commended, in not sparing Charge for accommodating Meetings, either by building or hiring Places for that Service.

By this Time the Half-yearly-meeting at *Dublin* came on, but nothing very remarkable happened there. I took my Leave of Friends, and when clear I left the City, and my dear Friend *Joseph Gill* accompanied me about three Weeks. He did not then appear as a Minister in Meetings, but was under great Exercise, and I was satisfied he was under a very considerable Influence of divine Goodness, which would be manifested by his coming forth in the Ministry in due Time, which accordingly came to pass; for in a few Weeks after his Return, he appeared very acceptably in the Ministry, and became a very serviceable Man in the Work.

After we parted I went on for *Cork*, in order to take Shipping Home, which I did, but the Wind not favouring us for almost three Weeks, gave me some Uneasiness, because I had wrote to my Wife, that I intended coming sooner; and I heard afterwards some of our Neighbours had reported, that I with the Ship was taken into *France*; but my poor Wife bore up bravely under it. When the Wind sprung up fair, the Master set sail, but we were but just got clear of the River before it veered against us; so the Master proposed that we might fetch *Waterford*, and thought it would be better to do so than to go back to *Cork*;
accordingly

accordingly we all agreed, and got there by the Close of the Evening, being Seventh-day ; I staid the First-day Meeting, which was very much to Satisfaction, and I was opened in the Excellency of the Gospel. On Second-day we set sail again, and got into *Minehead* in about forty eight Hours, and I posted Home by *Bridgewater*, and met with a hearty and kind Welcome from all our Family, more especially my dear Wife, having spent in *Ireland* somewhat more than eighteen Weeks. It soon got abroad that I was come Home, and many Friends from several neighbouring Meetings came to visit me, and we had great Comfort together.

Now I had nothing to do but to visit the Meetings around me, which were pretty numerous : But one Thing came upon me pretty much, and that was, *to put myself into some Business to get Bread*. Some proposed one Way, some another. *London* and *Bristol* were both proposed, but I could not see my Way to either of them ; and what I should do in the Country, being ignorant of Farming, I saw not yet. At last it was proposed that I might with a small Charge make a Conveniency to make a little Malt, in which, when an Apprentice, I had some Experience, being then used to it. I accordingly did, but my Stock was very small, but some kind Friends lent me some Money, and I found it answer better than I had expected, so that I was encouraged to proceed ; and in about three Years Time I found it answer'd very well, so that I went on with Pleasure, and took great Care, and was very diligent in my Business, and in attending all Meetings that I could reach in a Morning's Ride, as I found a Concern so to do ; and the Comfort and Happiness I then enjoyed was great, for I could entertain my Friends with a Lodging, and other Necessaries in a plain Way, which was very agreeable to us both ; and most Friends that came, took a Bed with me one or two Nights, as best suited their Conveniency in their Journey.

But

But in a little Time a Storm arose : The Parson of the Parish having had nothing from our Family for thirteen Years and upwards, of his small Tithes, and other Church-dues, (as he stiled them) got a Summons for me to meet him before the Justices ; but before the Time came I writ him a few Lines, to know his Demand, and he writ me a long Letter in answer thereto. And I replied to his Answer. All which are hereunto annexed. The Time came, and some other Friends were convened by other Priests from other Parishes at the same Time. When I was called, there were two Justices, one *Edward Phillips Esq;* of *Montacute*, and — *Harben Esq;* of *Newton* : *Pbillips* was very rough and boisterous in Words, and *Harben* altogether as mild, using sundry Arguments to persuade me to pay it myself, or suffer some other Person to pay it, being very earnest that I should suffer him to pay it for me, and he would not desire to have it altogether ; supposing that I might not so well spare what the Parson demanded at once. I told him, I was very much obliged to him for his kind Offer, believing his Intention was to serve me in it, but I could by no means accept it, without Injury to my own Mind, it being a Matter that concerned my Conscience, which I was desirous to keep void of Offence towards God. He took me into another Room, and was very earnest to have it made up ; urging, *that it was so much in Arrears, that it was beyond their Power to-end it, and it must be put into the Exchequer, and that would be very chargeable, which, says he, must fall upon you at last*. I told him, that I could do nothing to make it up : And having conferred some Time, we went in again, and he spoke to the Effect following, *That he was very sorry he could not serve us, as we were both his Neighbours and Friends* (meaning the Parson and me) and told the Parson, *it would be uneasy to us both ; and would have us end it between ourselves*. I said, It it were a Matter of just Debt that I was satisfied was my

my Neighbour's due, I should soon end it with my Neighbour Ray, and be as willing to pay, as he was to receive it; but as it was not of that Nature, I could by no means do it. So I was dismissed, and in a little Time served with an *Exchequer Process*; and in a few Months after, in the next Term, I was taken up in my Way for *Bristol*, where I was going about my Business, and put into Goal. But when the Parson had got me there, he was very uneasy indeed, so that he could not take his Rest, and told his Attorney, *If he lost all his Claim, he could by no means keep me there, for he had no Rest or Quietness of Mind Night nor Day*. So accordingly the Attorney came to the Keeper in less than ten Days Time, in the Parson's Name desiring him to let me go Home to look after my Business: Which I accordingly did, and in a few Days went my Journey to *Bristol*; and when I had done my Business there, took a little Turn into *Wiltshire*, and spent about two Weeks in visiting sundry Meetings, and so returned Home.

Then I acquainted my Friends at the Meeting for Sufferings in *London*, how it stood; who advised me, that the Parson could not proceed farther, as he had taken me up and put me into Goal: So I heard no more of it all that Winter; but in the Spring a distant Relation of our Family came to my Wife when I was from Home, and desired her to lend him ten Pounds, for he was going to a Fair, being a considerable Grazier. She had no Thoughts about the Parson's Demand, that being a much larger Sum, and he being a *Dissenter*, and having done me the like Favour, she lent it him, and he gave her his Note accordingly.

My Wife, when I came Home, told me what she had done, and I said, it was very well, mistrusting nothing of any Trick in the Matter; but as he came in my Absence to borrow it, so in like manner he came under Pretence to pay it, addressing himself to my Wife to this Effect; *Dear Cousin, if you can help me to that Note, I had best pay it; you know I borrowed it*

of

of you, and should pay it to you. So she very innocently fetch'd his Note, and he tore it immediately; and putting his Hand into his Pocket, takes out and throws her down the Parson's Receipt for the ten Pounds, in full of all Demands for Tithes to that Time. My poor Wife was under a very great Surprise, urging, *it would be a very great Uneasiness to me.* Your Husband, said he, is, we allow, a Man of Sense, but in this he is a stubborn Fool; and I would have paid it out of my own Pocket, rather than he should have ruined you and himself, which this *Exchequer* Suit would soon have done if it had gone on; for his original Demand is fourteen Pounds and upwards, and he hath been at forty or fifty Shillings Charge already, and you must have paid that and ten Times more if it had gone on, which now I have cleared for ten Pounds; I think you are exceeding well off. *Ay, but,* said she, *we look at inward Peace more than all that, and I shall be blamed for being privy to the Contrivance, and beget a Jealousy in my Husband about other Affairs.* Oh! my dear Cousin, trouble not yourself about that, said he, for I can clear you, that you are as innocent of it as a new-born Babe: And I know I could not have brought it about with your Husband any other Way, as he would have started so many Questions, than by ploughing with his Heifer.

When my Wife told me of it, which was not presently, it troubled me much, to have my Testimony thus evaded by this undermining Trick, which was, in the Man that did it, designed for our Good no doubt, and the Note that he gave for the Money being destroyed, I had nothing to shew under his Hand for the Money, and what to do in it I was at a loss: But I thought it best to convene the Elders, and let them know how it stood, and to be advised how I might clear my Testimony, and my dear Wife and Self, from having any Hand in this deceitful Trick; which I accordingly did, and they were satisfied we
were

were clear of the Contrivance, but did not know what to do to satisfy others about it ; one Friend was for *suing him* that had thus trick'd me for the ten Pounds : But others thought such an Act would do more Hurt than Good, and thought it by no means adviseable to act any farther, than to go to my Kinsman and let him know, that what he had done in the Case, tho' by him intended for a Kindness, yet it had the contrary Effect on our Minds, so that although he intended to serve us, it proved a Disservice, and to request, that for the future he would never serve us so again.

In due Time my Wife and I took an Opportunity, and discoursed the Matter over with him ; and he to excuse it said, he little thought we would take it so much amiss as we had, having, as he thought, no Reason for it, and wondered that our Friends should be so stubborn as to contend against Law ; and he could not bear to think we should be served as Mr. *Banton* and Mr. *Tilly* were ; and indeed, if it were again to do, I should do the same, *said he*. *Robert Banton* and *William Tilly* were two very great Sufferers by *Exchequer Procefs*, both very honest sincere Friends. Thus was this Affair ended. The first Letter I writ to the Parson, with the Parson's Answer, and my Reply, are hereunto annexed, *viz.*

' *Lymington, the 15th of the Fourth Month, June, 1712.*

' *Neighbour RAY,*

' **S**INCE thou art pleased to proceed against me
' by Justice's Warrant, I desire thou wouldst be
' pleased to let me know, what thou demandest ? else,
' how shall I be able to make my Defence. I think
' thy People this Year and last were very unreasonable
' in their Taking, having both Years (modestly com-
' puted) taken above one eighth Part of my Hay :
' And

And * *Brook's* never, as I am informed, paid any in kind till thou came into the Parish; but now for Nine-pence the three Acres, thou hast taken every Year Hay worth eight or nine Shillings *per Annum* at least. As for Arguments between us, for or against, I suppose them needless, but I take it very hard to be so treated from a Man of thy Pretensions. I believe thou wouldst not, if in my Case, like such Treatment; not that I murmur or repine because my Goods are taken away on this Account, being perswaded that it is my Duty *actively* to refuse a Compliance with the Laws that command Tithes; and if I must, as I have already, suffer the Spoiling of my Goods, I hope *passively* to submit and bear it. This I conclude with Desires of Good for thee and thine every Way.

* A little Water-Mead of three Acres, call'd *Brook's Mead*.

' SAMUEL BOWNAS.'

' S I R,

I HAVE been above thirteen Years in the Parish, and have not given your Family any Disturbance, though the Arrears which are due to me are considerable; so that you have no Reason to complain of hard Usage from me, but rather to thank me for my Kindness, in bearing this Injustice so long.

You don't think, when you go to Law with one another, or with some of those who differ from you, that you spoil their Goods, when you put them to Charges, that you may force them to do you Justice. And why, pray you, should it be thought a Spoiling of your Goods, when we do nothing more than you do yourselves, when you think you are wronged, that is, endeavour to recover our own? For I demand nothing of you but what I know to be mine before I receive it.

You might as well make an Entry upon our *Glebe-lands*, or upon any Thing else we possess, as to seize upon the Tithe, to which you have no more

' Title

‘ Title than to the other, unless you have bought
 ‘ them, as I am sure you have not.

‘ For every Body who understands these Things,
 ‘ will tell you, that when such Lands as are Tithe-
 ‘ free, are sold or lett, they are for that Reason valued
 ‘ at an higher Price, and the Lord or Seller makes
 ‘ the Tenant or Purchaser pay for the Tithe, as well
 ‘ as for the rest of the Estate: And that on the other
 ‘ hand, there is a proportionable Abatement made to
 ‘ the Purchasers and Tenants of such Lands as are
 ‘ liable to the Payment of Tithes. And there is very
 ‘ good Reason for it, because in that Case, the Tithes
 ‘ being no Part of the Landlord’s Property, he cannot
 ‘ make them over to another, or demand a Price for
 ‘ that which he has not sold; and those who rent or
 ‘ purchase his Estate, can claim no Title by Virtue
 ‘ of any Conveyance or Grant of his, but only to
 ‘ what he had a Right to dispose of himself: So that
 ‘ if you will needs, in this matter, pretend Conscience,
 ‘ you ought not to occupy any Land but what is
 ‘ Tithe-free.

‘ But if you think that this would be very grievous
 ‘ and inconvenient, you ought, when you occupy
 ‘ Tithe-land, to permit us quietly to enjoy our Tithes,
 ‘ which are a Part of our *Free-hold*; and to which
 ‘ we have the same Title as we have to our *Glebe*,
 ‘ wherein you claim no Propriety, as indeed you have
 ‘ no manner of Title to the Tithe. If you have, be
 ‘ pleased to shew it, and let us know from whom you
 ‘ had it. And if you have none, as I know you have
 ‘ not, don’t go to pretend Conscience for invading
 ‘ your Neighbour’s Property.

‘ For my Part I do not see any Reason, why you
 ‘ should not actively comply with the Law for Pay-
 ‘ ment of Tithes, as well as with that for Taxes, as
 ‘ your Friends have done over all the Kingdom ever
 ‘ since the Revolution; and some of them have been
 ‘ Collectors, tho’ the Title of the Act of Parliament
 ‘ did

did plainly shew, that the Tax was for carrying on a War against *France* with Vigour : And yet your Friends, even those who have been of greatest Reputation among you, and the Champions of your Cause, have declared as much against the Lawfulness of all War, as they have done against the Payment of Tithes ; and sometimes have caried the matter so high, as to refuse the Payment of Money demanded of them for that Purpose ; as *Robert Barclay* in his *Apology* tells us, *they suffered because they would not pay for Drums and Colours, and other military Furniture.* And this they did in the Time of Peace, when the Militia met only to make a Raree-show, and had at the Place of Rendezvous no other Enemies to skirmish with but Butterflies. Nevertheless, since the War against *France* began, your Friends have given the same active Obedience to the Laws for Payment of Taxes, as their fellow Subjects have done ; and I hope you, for the future, will do for the Payment of Tithes, which, according to your avowed Principles, is as lawful as the Payment of Taxes for carrying on a War with Vigour.

It is a vain Thing to pretend Conscience to excuse Oppression or Covetousness, for it must be one or either of these which makes any Man take Possession of what is not his own, but his Neighbour's.

If we lived by the Alms-basket, and could claim nothing but what we might expect from the Benevolence of those from whom we make any Demand of this Nature, we could not blame you so much : But the Case is otherwise ; for we desire none of your Benevolence, and we know the Tithe is no Part of your Estate, and that you can claim no Right to it, either by Donation or Purchase. Therefore don't go to call that your own which is not ; and being you disclaim all Violence against, or Oppression of Men upon the Account of their Conscience, we may reasonably expect so much Tenderness

I

from

' from you, that you would not oppress us, because
 ' we differ from you ; and that you would not, under
 ' a Pretence of Conscience, seize upon our Estates,
 ' and then make an Outcry against us, when we desire
 ' the Assistance of the civil Magistrate, for recover-
 ' ing any Part of our Properties or Freeholds, as
 ' often as you unjustly invade them. Surely we might
 ' look for more Equity from you, being we are
 ' Members of that Church, which in other Respects
 ' permits you the free Exercise of your Religion,
 ' and has confirmed the same by the late Act of In-
 ' dulgence, agreed upon by the Bishops, Lords, and
 ' Commons of our Communion. An Instance of such
 ' Moderation as was never shewn to our Church by
 ' any other Sect who had us under their Power, whe-
 ' ther *Papists*, or some violent and fierce *Protestant*
 ' *Dissenters*, who perhaps would handle us as roughly
 ' as our Predecessors were by them, if God should
 ' again permit us to fall under their merciless Hands.

' You say, *You take it hard to be so treated by a Man*
 ' *of my Pretensions, and if it was from some of the same*
 ' *Cloth, you would think it was like themselves.* But
 ' why should it be thought inconsistent with my Pre-
 ' tensions, to demand what I know to be my own?
 ' And why may not I say the same to you, that I take
 ' it hard to be so treated by a Man of your Preten-
 ' sions, who profess, that *Violence* against those who
 ' differ from you, merely upon the Account of their
 ' Conscience, is unwarrantable ; and yet, contrary to
 ' this your Profession, you seize upon that which is
 ' mine, mine by as good a Right as you have to your
 ' own Estate : For you cannot say that you have pur-
 ' chased the Tithes, or that any who had a Title to
 ' dispose of them, did make them over to you ; and
 ' yet for all that, you pretend Conscience for the Dis-
 ' turbance you give me, for no other Reason, but
 ' because I am of a different Communion from you.
 ' If this was done by some who maintain, that *Violence*
 ' against

‘ against Men of another Perswasion is *meritorious*,
 ‘ and that *Hereticks* ought not to be suffered to live,
 ‘ I should think it was like themselves ; though from
 ‘ you I might expect other Things. But let that be as
 ‘ it will, I desire nothing from you but the Profits of
 ‘ my own Estate, which you unjustly with-hold from
 ‘ me ; and I am resolved, whatever you think or say
 ‘ about the Matter, that *I will have my Right*. How-
 ‘ ever, if you are willing to live peaceably, I shall be
 ‘ as moderate as you can expect, and for that Reason
 ‘ have referred this Business to Mr. *Smith*, whom I
 ‘ have authorized to do as he thinks fit ; and am, *Sir*,

At the Parsonage house,
 July 24th 1712.

‘ *Your Friend and Well-wisher,*

‘ WILLIAM RAY.’

‘ *Lymington, the 10th of the Sixth Month, August, 1712.*

‘ *Neighbour RAY,*

‘ **S**INCE thou hast advanced some Arguments
 ‘ for thy taking Tithes, I have somewhat to offer
 ‘ in Answer thereunto, for my *Refusal*.

‘ 1st. Thou art pleased to write, *I ought to thank*
 ‘ *thee for bearing with this Injustice so long* ; but I
 ‘ take the Refusal of paying Tithes to be no Injus-
 ‘ tice. *Therefore, &c.*

‘ 2dly. Thou says, *when I go to Law with another*,
 ‘ (or some that differ from me) *I do not think that*
 ‘ *Spoiling of their Goods* ; which I do not take to be
 ‘ a parallel Case with this : For, *first*, if I go to Law
 ‘ with any Man, it shall be for some *just Debt* owing
 ‘ to me, for which he, whom I so go to Law with,
 ‘ shall have received some valuable Consideration ;
 ‘ but from thee I have received none for the Tithe of
 ‘ my Increase ; therefore it’s not a parallel Case.

3dly. He with whom I go to Law shall have no
 ‘ *just Plea of Conscience*, because if I can have no
 ‘ plain Demonstration that he had of me a *valuable*
 ‘ *Consideration* for which I make my Demands on him,
 ‘ I will not go to Law at all ; therefore it’s not a
 ‘ parallel Case.

‘ 4tly. If on such a Foundation I go to Law, and
 ‘ force my adverse Party to Justice by Law, I con-
 ‘ clude with thee, *it is not spoiling of Goods*. But to
 ‘ go to Law, and by it take away Peoples Goods,
 ‘ without such a *valuable Consideration* as above, is
 ‘ *Spoiling of Goods*, in my Opinion, *with a Witness*.

‘ Thou writes me, *I may as well seize of the Glebe-*
 ‘ *lands, or upon any Thing else we possess, as upon the*
 ‘ *Tithes*. Under Favour, I am of another Mind ;
 ‘ because I have no Title to shew for thy *Glebe-lands*,
 ‘ or any Thing else thou enjoys : But for my Land,
 ‘ the *Whole* I take to be mine, without any Reserve
 ‘ or Exception whatsoever, as the Writings that give
 ‘ me my Title to it, do sufficiently set forth and de-
 ‘ clare ; and I have given for it a *valuable Conside-*
 ‘ *ration*, which thou never did for the *tenth Part*
 ‘ thereof : Therefore, I am sure I have more Right to
 ‘ it than thou canst pretend to, in Justice, Equity and
 ‘ Reason ; because I have bought, without Reserve,
 ‘ the *Whole*, and manured the same at my own Cost
 ‘ and Charge ; but thou hast bought no Part thereof,
 ‘ nor been at any Charge about improving it, that I
 ‘ know of.

‘ Thou farther writes, *that every Body that under-*
 ‘ *stands these Things, will tell me, when such Lands as*
 ‘ *are Tithe-free are sold, for that Reason they are valued*
 ‘ *higher*. What Argument is that for the *Lawfulness*
 ‘ of Tithes, according to the Gospel ? I conceive
 ‘ none at all.

‘ The next is, that if I occupy *Tithe-lands*, I ought
 ‘ *quietly to permit you to enjoy the Tithes* : That’s the
 ‘ Matter in Dispute, which shall in its Place be spoken
 ‘ to.

‘ Now

‘ Now I am come to thy Argument about *Taxes*, wherein thou endeavours to make us inconsistent with ourselves, in *actively* complying with the Law for *Taxes*, but refusing a *Compliance* with the Law for *Tithes*, endeavouring thereby to lay *Tithes* and *Taxes* upon *one Foundation* : In this also I differ from thee ; for I understand *Taxes* to be paid as a *civil Debt, Tribute* or *Custom*, to *Cæsar* : But *Tithes* are paid as a religious Act to God, and holy Church, as in its Place shall be farther shewn.

‘ Indeed our Saviour said, *Render unto Cæsar, the Things that are Cæsar’s ; and unto God, the Things that are God’s*. Mark xii. 17. Now if we must render to *Cæsar* the Things that are *Cæsar’s*, and unto God the Things that are *God’s*, then it remains to be proved, that *Tithes* are *Cæsar’s Due*, before they be demanded as *his Right*.

‘ But here’s the grand Objection of *Inconsistency* ; that because we have suffered for refusing to pay towards the Militia for *Drums, Colours, &c.* and yet *actively* comply with the Law of *Taxes*, which is to carry on a War with Vigour, &c. insisting on *R. Barclay’s Words* to strengthen the Objection ; we are still of the same Mind with *R. Barclay*, that *Wars and Fighting are inconsistent with the Gospel Principles ; and when it’s brought so near to us, that by Law we are obliged to act both in Person and Estate, we in this Case chuse rather passively to suffer, than actively to comply, for Conscience-sake*. And this is still our Case, and a Suffering we lie under (with respect to the Militia) in many Places, being careful to walk by the Rule of Christ’s Doctrine ; and yet do not hereby think ourselves inconsistent in actively complying with the Law of *Taxes*, in rendring to *Cæsar* the Things that are *Cæsar’s*, and he may do therewith what pleaseth him, we may not direct him ; therefore, to use thy own familiar Simile, I take this Argument of *Taxes* to have no more

‘ Weight in it, in relation to Tithes, it being no
 ‘ parallel Case, than the *Enemies that the Militia met*
 ‘ *with in their Rendezvous, at their Raree-show.*

‘ Thou writest, that it’s a vain Thing to pretend
 ‘ *Conscience to excuse Oppression or Covetousness.* I am en-
 ‘ tirely of thy Mind; so that where any Man pretends
 ‘ to refuse the Payment of Tithes out of *Covetousness*,
 ‘ believing at the same Time in his Conscience they
 ‘ are *justly due*; ’tis pity, I say, if that be his only
 ‘ Excuse, but that he should pay *smartly* for it: But
 ‘ beware of mistaking, by supposing the *Refusal* to be
 ‘ from *Covetousness*, when ’tis really *Conscience*.

‘ Thou addest, *if you lived by the Alms basket, &c.*
 ‘ which indeed I think you ought to do, if your own
 ‘ Hands can’t sufficiently administer to your own
 ‘ Wants; for a *forced Maintenance* is not consistent
 ‘ with the *Gospel Ministry*; and that thou knows right
 ‘ well, having often confess’d it in my House. Thou
 ‘ adds, *Tithes is no Part of my Estate either by Dona-*
 ‘ *tion or Purchase.* But I say as above, I have *pur-*
 ‘ *chased the Whole*, without any Reserve or Exception
 ‘ of Tithes. But in thy own Country, *North Britain*,
 ‘ I have been informed, Tithes are *excepted* in Deeds
 ‘ and Conveyances, so that they have some Colour to
 ‘ use such an Argument there, but I can see no Foun-
 ‘ dation for such an Argument in this Country at all.
 ‘ Thou advises me *not to call that my own, which is*
 ‘ *not*: I say, it is *my own*, because as above, I have,
 ‘ without Reserve, *purchased the Whole*, as witness my
 ‘ Writings: Besides all that, at my *own Charge* I
 ‘ have manured and improved it.

‘ Thy next Paragraph is already answered.

‘ I acknowledge thee a Member of that Church,
 ‘ or Society, who have granted us the *Indulgence* we
 ‘ now enjoy in the Exercise of our Religion; for
 ‘ which, I with the Rest of my Brethren, ought to be
 ‘ truly thankful to God and the Government. But I
 ‘ must tell thee, some of thy Brethren, not of the
 ‘ meanest

' meanest Rank in your Church, have, like battering
 ' Rams, endeavoured to break that Chain of *Indulgence*
 ' we now enjoy, but Providence has hitherto prevent-
 ' ed them, and I hope ever will, unless God shall see
 ' meet to try his Church, to discover thereby the
 ' truly *Religious* from the *Hypocrites*.

' Thou seems angry, and to resent it, that I should
 ' take it ill or hard, to be *so treated by a Man of*
 ' *thy Pretensions* ; but the Reason why I so writ, is
 ' this ; because I have more than once heard, that
 ' my Neighbour Ray has said in our House, that it
 ' was a Matter of Conscience to him, to force a Main-
 ' tenance from such as for the Sake of Conscience could
 ' not pay him ; using that Text, *Whose Ox have I taken,*
 ' *or whom have I defrauded ?* Which I have sometimes
 ' spoke of to others, and it gained great Credit and
 ' good Thoughts concerning my Neighbour Ray ;
 ' and for that Reason, and no other, I took such
 ' Treatment hard. But however, if thy Conscience
 ' be altered, it will give Reason for my Thoughts
 ' concerning thee also to change.

' Now I shall give thee my Reasons, why I can't
 ' *actively* comply with the Law for *paying Tithes*, and
 ' answer thy last Paragraph in the Conclusion of this.

' 1st. I was in my Youth very thoughtful touching
 ' the Nature and Design of *Religion*, and conscious to
 ' myself, that an *implicit Faith*, with a *blind Obedience*,
 ' might not be sufficient to bring me to the End
 ' intended by it. 2^{dly}, Observing many under great
 ' Sufferings for refusing to pay Tithes, and their Plea
 ' for it was *Conscience* ; but many more I found did
 ' pay, and thought they did right, at least made no
 ' Scruple of Conscience in doing it ; this Contra-
 ' diction in Practice made me willing to look into
 ' it myself ; that 3^{dly}, what I did herein might
 ' not be for *Imitation's* Sake on either Side, but that
 ' I might act on a Principle of *Faith*, as knowing,
 ' *what is not of Faith is Sin*. And 4^{thly}, and lastly,

‘ these Reasons put me on examining and trying
 ‘ for myself.

‘ This premised, I now assure thee, that it is not
 ‘ out of *Stubborness*, *Ill-humour* or *Covetousness*, but
 ‘ purely on a Principle of *Conscience*, for these Reasons
 ‘ following, that I can neither *pay* or *receive Tithes*.

‘ 1st. The Dedication of them is grossly *superstitious*,
 ‘ (and I think protested against by most, unless such
 ‘ as love to suck the Sweet of other Mens Labour)
 ‘ being dedicated and given by King *Eitelwolf*, (about
 ‘ 855) to God and St. Mary for the Redemption of his
 ‘ own Soul, with the Souls of his Ancestors ; in the
 ‘ Consideration whereof, the Clergy were to sing
 ‘ such a Number of Masses for the King and his
 ‘ Nobles, &c.

‘ 2^{dly}. It is already granted by me, that we must
 ‘ render to *Cæsar* the Things that are *Cæsar’s*, and
 ‘ unto God, the Things that are God’s. And I promise
 ‘ thee, for my own Part, I shall be both ready and
 ‘ willing to pay the Tenth of my Increase unto God,
 ‘ when I am satisfied he requires it of me ; or unto
 ‘ them he shall appoint, when I am satisfied he has
 ‘ appointed them, as he did the Tribe of *Levi* ; but
 ‘ for me to pay Tithe to a Man, claiming it as
 ‘ a Minister of God, when I know that no such
 ‘ Thing is required of me, (Tithe being no Gospel
 ‘ Maintenance, that I can understand) it may justly
 ‘ be said unto me, *Who has required this of thy Hands?*
 ‘ Yet however, if Tithe be *compelled* from me by a
 ‘ human Law, I can’t help that, nor resist the Force
 ‘ of that Demand by Argument from Scripture ;
 ‘ therefore, being persuaded that God requires of
 ‘ me no such Thing as the Payment of Tithes, but
 ‘ that I am called to protest against all *Superstition* and
 ‘ *Idolatry*, and the Law of Tithes plainly appearing
 ‘ to me to be such, therefore I cannot, with a safe
 ‘ Conscience *actively* comply therewith, but chuse
 ‘ rather to please God than Man, altho’ it may be to
 ‘ my

‘ my Disadvantage in this World, yet by so doing I
‘ hope for future Gain.

‘ 3dly. And again, Tithes are required to be paid
‘ as a *religious Act*, viz. *to God and holy Church*; and
‘ as above, I am perswaded that God requires no
‘ such Thing, therefore I can’t pay them with a safe
‘ Conscience, being a *Protestant* against that which I
‘ call *Popery*, not in Word and Tongue only, but in
‘ Deed and Truth also.

‘ *Lastly*. Tithes are not required by the Gospel,
‘ that I can understand; if thou canst make it out,
‘ please to do it, for ’tis clear to me, that Christ
‘ came to finish and put an end to that Law which
‘ required Tithes, as well as to the Priesthood sup-
‘ ported by them; therefore to continue in the Prac-
‘ tice of Tithing, is in effect, *denying that Christ is*
‘ *come in the Flesh to put an End to them*, according to
‘ Scripture and the Practice of former Times; for
‘ which Reason, I think an *active* Compliance with
‘ the Law for Tithes is *Sin*, and in my Opinion, he
‘ that payeth or he that receiveth, are equally cul-
‘ pable in God’s Sight; for which Cause we can neither
‘ *receive* nor *pay*, as this Deed of Settlement will prove,
‘ and more Instances of the like kind might be pro-
‘ duced from sundry Parts of the Nation; a plain
‘ Demonstration, that as we can’t *pay* Tithes, neither
‘ can we *receive* them, when they are as legal a Pro-
‘ perty to us as they are to you.

‘ I could say more, but what is said may perhaps
‘ be tedious, and thought impertinent, therefore for
‘ the present this shall suffice.

‘ To conclude, thou art pleased to give me thy
‘ Resolution, viz. *to have* what thou calls *thy Right*;
‘ and if I could think it was so too, we should soon
‘ reconcile this Matter.

‘ Thou adds, *If I am willing to live peaceably*, (and
‘ I desire no other than a peaceable Living) *thou wilt*
‘ *be as moderate as I can expect*. But this seems an odd

‘ Way

' Way of shewing thy Moderation, to employ an
 ' Attorney ; for thou adds, *for that Purpose thou hast*
 ' *referred the Matter to Mr. Smith, to do as he thinks*
 ' *fit*, and that may not perhaps be the best Way to
 ' shew thy Moderation ; however, be that as it will,
 ' I must tell thee, that what I cannot directly pay,
 ' for the Reasons aforesaid, I cannot order or allow
 ' another indirectly to pay for me ; for although I
 ' might bribe my Conscience, as the chief Priests did
 ' the Soldiers, and lull it asleep in such Hypocrisy,
 ' yet an awaking Time will come on, when every
 ' Thought, with every secret Thing, will be brought
 ' to Light, and appear as it is.

' This with due Respects from him who shall always
 ' be ready and willing to serve thee and thine, in any
 ' Thing I can with a safe Conscience, and in any
 ' Office of Love mayst command

' Thy Friend and Neighbour,

' SAMUEL BOWNAS.'

These Letters were exchanged between us some
 Weeks before I was made a Prisoner, and whether
 they might soften him or not, I dare not say much ;
 but, as before, he was very uneasy while I was in
 Prison, and, as I was informed, told his Attorney and
 his Wife, *if he lost his Debt, he could not keep me there.*

This Storm being blown over I enjoyed Quietness,
 save that I was prosecuted for Church-Rates, small
 Tithes, &c. for the Parson would not let his Dues, as
 he call'd them, run on again in Arrears, but would
 take it in Kind every Year, so he never had me before
 a Justice again, but if he could not have it in one
 Thing would take another. I now had nothing but
 my Business that lay upon me, save the Attendance of
 Meetings for Worship and Discipline, with Marriages
 and Burials, which took up pretty much of my Time,
 there

there being but very few to attend such Services in the Country : So that I had sometimes long Journeys on those Occasions.

An ACCOUNT of my visiting Devonshire
and Cornwall.

ON the 21st of the Eighth Month 1715, I set out from Home, and visited *Taunton, Wellington, Milverton, Spiceland, Cullumpton, and Topsham*, where the Quarterly-meeting for *Devonshire* was held at that Time, and was at three Meetings there to good Satisfaction. From thence to *Sticklepath* and *Launceston*, where I had a very large and good Meeting. From thence to *Port-Isaac* and *Falmouth*, visiting Friends to *Penrin* : The Quarterly-meeting was held at *Falmouth*, and I had there very agreeable Service. From thence to *Penrin, Market-Jew* and *Penzance*, so back to *Falmouth*. From thence to *Austel, Tregony, Looe* and *Liskard, Germans, Plymouth, Kingsbridge* and *Totness* ; I had Meetings at all these Places, some of them were very large and well ; and at *Exeter* likewise ; From thence to *Cbard*, and so Home. In this small Journey I had about thirty eight Meetings, and travell'd about three Hundred and fifty Miles.

In about a Year or two after this, my Wife was taken with a lingering Disorder, for the recovering her out of which, I applied myself to several Doctors, but all in vain, for she continued wasting more than two Years and eight Months, growing weaker apace a few Weeks before she died, which was in the Eighth Month 1719. She died in a sweet Frame, often saying, that *Nothing troubled her, but that she was so easily deceived about the Parson's Tithe, which being done in Ignorance, not designedly, she was the more easy about it.*

After

After which, I was at a strait what Course to take for some Time, being in considerable Business, which I kept on that Winter, and in the Spring put it off to my Servant, and lett what little Estate I had to him, putting off all Business, and went the next Summer into my own Country, the North, to visit my Friends. I went to the Yearly-meetings at *Bristol* and *London*, in course as they came, and travelled from *London* through *Hertfordshire*, *Leicestershire* and *Nottinghamshire* to *Leeds*, visiting the Meetings of Friends as I passed along: I was at sundry very large open Meetings in my Way to the Yearly-meeting at *York*, which was very large, and a great Number of Ministers of both Sexes. I had no Time till the last Meeting, and the Time of that was far spent before I began, but then I took my Time pretty thoroughly, being opened very largely in distinguishing between *true* and *false Religion*, setting them as it were Side by Side, that they might judge for themselves of both the Worship and the Ministry, with their different Effects upon the Minds of Men and Women in regulating our Passions, and reforming our Minds; and opened pretty fully the Danger that Ministers were in, to preach from the *Letter* instead of the *Spirit*; and that our former Openings and Experiences alone were not to be depended upon, but our safest and best Support in that Work, was the immediate Ability of the Spirit, opening our Understandings in Matter suitable to every State, that our Words might be fitly spoken, then they would carry their own Evidence, and be serviceable to the Hearers: I was very large and particular on these Heads; and there being sundry Clergymen, and Teachers of other Societies, I did not hear of any Objection made to the Doctrine they heard: But some of our Friends thought, that what I had to say about the Ministry would have been better deliver'd in the Meeting of Ministers; but that could not have answered so well, as to the Teachers of
other

other Societies, who might want Instruction in these Things, perhaps more than our own People did. This was a very high Day, and I found in myself afterwards great Satisfaction and Peace.

I now visited Friends towards *Kendal*, and through Part of *Cumberland* and *Northumberland*, into *Scotland*, having for my Companion a young Man from *Sedburg*, his Name was *John Blamore*. I found Friends in that Nation very much decreased in Number, above one Half, and sundry Meetings quite dropt, unless when a Friend came to visit them.

I spent about six Weeks in that Nation, but nothing extraordinary happened. I returned into *Cumberland*, visiting most of the Meetings in that County. Our Friends had at *Cockermouth* appointed a Meeting to be the Day after the Fair, at the Time called *Michaelmas*, and it being in the most hot Time of the Opposition the *Pearsons* gave to Friends; *Job* and his Brother being at that Fair on their Business, they gave out, that they would be at the Meeting the next Day, which gave an Alarm to both Town and Country People, so that it was a very large Meeting; and as *Job* and I had been very friendly before he fell into these ranting Fits, some Friends thought he would shew me some Respect, more than he had done to some others, having been heard at Times to speak in my Favour: But *James Dickenson* being present, whom they had abused so very much, said, *I should be pleased to see a friendly Meeting between Job and my Friend, but I little expect it.* The Meeting came on, and was very large, and very open, and quiet, neither *Job* nor his Brother came, being otherwise employed; having some Concerns with some Country Men in the Fair, they went to an Ale-house to settle their Affairs, and differ'd so much about them, that from Words they proceeded to Blows, and this Fray held the Time of the Meeting, so we were free from any of their Disturbance, and a sweet, comfortable, quiet Meeting we had to great Satisfaction.

From

From *Cockermouth* I visited the rest of the Meetings in that Part of the County, and so into *Westmoreland* again, visiting all the Meetings in that County, and through the Dales to *Richmond*, and *York* Quarterly-meeting the Winter Quarter, which was very large, considering the Season of the Year. I had sundry satisfactory Times amongst Friends, both in Meetings of Business and amongst the Ministers, in very freely opening, and shewing my dear Brethren and Sisters, in the Openings of divine Life, the Experience and Knowledge that I had attained to in the Work of the Gospel, finding my Spirit much enlarged in the setting forth thereof. But the last Meeting I was at in *York*, was on the First-day in the Evening by Candle-light, and the Crowd in the House was so very great, that the Candles would hardly burn, some died quite out with the Breath of the People; the excessive Crowd made it very troublesome for want of Room, and not so edifying as if the Company had been less.

From thence I went to *Bridlington*, *Oustwick*, *Northcave*, visiting Meetings till I came to *Bradford* and *Leeds*: I had some very large open Meetings in that Part, as at *Brigbouse*, *Higbflats*, *Sheffield*, &c.

I travelled to *Nottingham*, and had some Meetings in that County, and so on to *Leicester*, had sundry small Meetings thereabout, and some who were convinced in my first travelling thither, were glad to see me, and I them, so we claimed Kindred in the Truth.

I now made a kind of a short Visit in my Way to *London*, which I visited thoroughly, staid in the City four Weeks, and had very good Satisfaction: Returning through Part of *Berkshire*, I had at *Reading* two very large Meetings, and so into *Dorsetshire*, having no Meetings after *Reading* till I came thither, and so to the Quarterly-meeting in *Somersetshire*, which being the Spring Quarter, was held at *Glastonbury*, and very large it was indeed. Then back to *Somerton* Monthly-meeting, visiting Meetings to and fro, being at sundry Funerals,

Funerals, both before and after the Yearly-meeting at *Bristol*, which was this Year very large. From that Meeting I went towards *London*, visiting Meetings in my Way thither, and after Yearly-meeting was over I returned by *Alton*, *Ailsford*, *Rumsey*, *Southampton*, and the *Isle of Wight*, and back to *Ringwood* to the Quarterly-meeting for *Hampshire*, and to *Pool* Yearly-meeting, it being there this Year. After which I came to *Bridport*, quartering at *Caleb Hills*, who married my Niece; and this Summer, before the Yearly-meeting at *London*, I had made my Addressee to the Widow *Nichols*, leaving the Matter to her Consideration, and now I renewed the Sute. And in the Eighth Month, with sundry other Friends, went to solicit the Parliament for an *Amendment* of the *Affirmation*, in which Undertaking we were favoured with Success, which was of very great Advantage to the Society, and the good Effects of it soon appeared.

I returned Home in the Spring, and then proceeded in my Addressee to the Widow, and we were married in the Second Month 1722, and we went to *London* Yearly-meeting together, which was to very great Comfort.

I returned directly Home with my Wife, and being in a Coach, had no Opportunity of visiting Meetings either going or coming. Being got safe Home, I applied myself to assist my Wife in her Business as well as I could, attending General, Monthly and other Meetings on publick Occasions for three Years: Then I had a Concern to visit *America* once more, which my poor Wife could not at first with Ease consent to, although I had laid it before her when I first made my Addressee to her, yet when it came to be put in Practice, was not easily got over. But afterwards she gave me freely up to go with my Son-in-Law; and I got ready and went off, before it was thought of by almost any Body but the Friends in our own Neighbourhood. However, that it might not look like stealing away,
I wrote

I wrote to some of my chosen Friends at *London*, in the North, *Bristol*, and elsewhere through this Nation, and to some few in *Ireland*, being willing to advise them where to meet me with Letters in that Country. Now having nothing to do more, my Wife brought me on my Way to *Pool*, at which Place, before I went off, I received Answers to sundry of my Letters, some of which, if Brevity did not require the contrary, would well deserve a Place here.

I shall now proceed to my last Journey into *America*, viz.

An ACCOUNT of my TRAVELS in America, the second Time, being in the Year 1726, and in the Fiftieth Year of my Age.

I LEFT my Home the 22d Day of the Tenth Month 1726, being accompanied by my dear Wife, a Kinsman, and a Son-in-Law, to *Pool*, in order to take Shipping there with my Son-in-Law *Josiah Nickelson*, but the Ship was not quite ready; and when it was, the Wind being against us, we were obliged to stay there above five Weeks, so that I had sundry satisfactory Opportunities both amongst Friends and others.

But now all being ready, and my Wife also gone Home some Days before, we set sail out of *Studland-bay*, the 24th of the Eleventh Month, with a fair Wind and pleasant Weather, which carried us a considerable Distance off the Land; but it held but three Days, and then the Wind turn'd contrary and blow'd hard, which made me very sick, and other ways out of Order, so that I almost despaired of my Life for a few Days, but I had great Comfort and Peace of Mind, being satisfied that I was in my Place, and in the

the Way of my Duty. I recovered as the Weather grew better, and the Sea quieter, but we had a very long and tedious Passage, being eleven Weeks and two Days upon the Ocean, from Land to Land; and on the 14th of the Second Month 1727, we landed at *Hampton*, otherwife *Kickatan* in *Virginia*, and that Evening I got a Passage in a *Pool Ship* up to *Sleepy-hole*, and about the 11th Hour I got to *Robert Jordan's*, being very glad, tho' very weary, that I was got to so good a Place, where I had so hearty a Welcome, and had so great an Income of Peace and Comfort. This being on the Seventh-day of the Week, the next Morning I went to a Funeral about twenty Miles, which was a long Journey on my first Arrival; and considering the Inhabitants are but thin, there was a great Concourse of People on that Occasion, and I had a pretty open Time, considering I was not quite recovered of my Weakness; besides, the Motion of the Sea was very much in my Head, so that I had a great Dizziness and Swimming, which made me to reel like a Drunkard, as is common in such like Cases.

After Meeting I went with my Friend *Robert Jordan* to an Inn, near to the Place where his Son *Robert* was a Prisoner, who was a pretty Youth, and had a very serviceable Ministry. The Father and I staid with the Prisoner all the next Day, and in the Evening we went to lodge at the Prisoner's House, his poor Wife being alone; and although her Husband was confined, she was chearful. We had also a Meeting in the Prison to good Satisfaction, and many People came to it, and were very orderly.

From thence I went to a Meeting at the Western Branch of *Nansemund River*, and was at the Funeral of a young Man who was very much lamented. After which I went that Night towards *Chuckatuck*, where I had a fine comfortable Opportunity; but on the Road, I had some Discourse with an ancient Friend, concerning the Health of the Country, we supposing

People did not live so long in *Virginia* as in *Europe*. This Friend told me, that the first Man-child which was born in that Province, of *English* Parents, lived eighty Years, and that many since had lived considerably longer ; so that it's not the Climate, but the Intemperance of the People, that shortens their Days, for Experience made it appear, that temperate People lived there much the same Time as they did in *Europe*. But this First-born of the Province was very remarkable, for it was said that he being disaffected to the then Government, and uttering some treasonable Expressions against it, was tried, and found guilty, and condemned to die for that Crime : But when it was made appear, that he was the first Male-child born in the Province of the *English* Nation, it was resolved, that he should be pardoned. Thus he was preserved from that untimely End, to run out Nature's Race, which continued eighty Years.

I went after this Meeting to visit the Prisoner, and next Day was at a Funeral, the People being very humble, by reason of a great Mortality, so that preaching the Gospel had a very great Reach upon them, and several were convinced : Next Day I went to *Levy neck*, had a Meeting, and went next Day to *Surrey* Meeting-house to a Funeral, having been at four in about two Weeks. After this I took a Turn round again to *Levy-neck*, otherwise *Pagan Creek*, and had a Meeting. Thence to *Raskers-neck*, had a Meeting, and so round till the Quarterly-meeting was at hand ; and then came on to the Prisoner's House, viz. *Robert Jordan's*, to lodge.

Next Day at the Meeting I met with a Friend from *London*, his Name was *Joshua Fielding*, who had visited that Province, and *South Carolina*, and had travell'd by Land to *North Carolina*, about five Hundred Miles, in about three Weeks, mostly alone, which was a difficult and hazardous Attempt : Some thought it too great an Undertaking, and seemed to blame him for it,
but

but he got safe through, though he had no Provision but what he carried with him, and met with but about four or five Houses or Plantations in all that five Hundred Miles Travel, which obliged him to lodge in the Woods frequently ; but having a small Pocket Compass, it was his Guide, when the Sun and Stars were hid from him. But I have since heard, that some others have travelled over this same Ground, (Plantations and Settlements being now placed at proper Distances) with less Hardship, viz. they having a Road mark'd out by the Government, and now they may accomplish this Journey without so frequently lying in the Woods, as when this Friend came from thence. I was at the Quarterly-meeting which held the Seventh and First-day, and it being very hot Weather, made it a little tedious to bear, there being a great Crowd of People, but the Meetings ended well, and were of good Service.

Thence I went to *Levy-neck* again, and visited all the Meetings up to *Curt's* on the Banks of *James's River*, and had an open good Meeting there, though small. Thence to *Gerrard Ellijon's*, and had a large and open Meeting. Thence to *Rappabannock Ferry*, travelling sixty Miles that Day : I lodged at a poor Widow's House, no Friend by Profession, but she was exceeding kind. I had something to say in Prayer before Meat, with which she was greatly affected, and broken into Tears very much, with some others of the Family. When we left her in the Morning, she would not be prevailed upon to take any Thing for our Quarters, but desired that she might be favoured with such Guests often. I gave her Children something, and we left her in much Love and Tendernefs. Thence I travell'd towards *Maryland*, about seventy Miles, and had but one Meeting in the Way, where lived *William Duff*, who was at that Time a very tender and serviceable Man.

The Yearly - meeting in *Maryland* came now on, which held four Days, viz Three for Worship, and one for Business. Many People resort to it, and transact a deal of Trade one with another, so that it is a kind of Market or Change, where the Captains of Ships and the Planters meet and settle their Affairs; and this draws Abundance of People of the best Rank to it. It being in that called the *Whitsun-week*.

After this Meeting I visited the Province on that Side of the Bay, fully from *Potuxant*, and some other Places where Meetings had not been, missing no Place till I came up to the Head of the Bay; but nothing uncommon happen'd at those Meetings, which were about eight in all. Then I ferry'd over the great River *Susquebannab* to *Nottingham* in *Pensylvania*, many Friends having come from thence into *Maryland* to meet me, and conduct me over that large Ferry, which was attended with pretty much Danger, it being a wide and very rough Sea, and I seemed in more Danger than when I was upon the Ocean in the greatest Storm we met with, but through Mercy we all got safe over, although with hard Labour and great Care and Difficulty; and the first Meeting that I had in that Province was in *Nottingham*, and I had two in that Township. Then I visited the Meetings as they came in course, as *New-garden*, *London*, *Grove*, *Kennet*, *Concord*, *Chester*, *Springfield*, and so to *Philadelphia*. A great Number of Friends came out of *Philadelphia* to meet me, which gave me great Uneasiness, fearing I should never be enabled to answer the high Expectations that were raised by such a Conduct; and it were better to forbear such Doings, for it is rather a Hurt than a Help.

Now I shall give my Opinion of those Meetings which were so very large, several of them amounting to fifteen Hundred, and some more, and mostly another Generation; for very few of the Elders, that twenty Years before were serviceable, zealous Men, were

were now living ; and now many of the rising Youth did come up in the Form more than in the Power and Life, which their Predecessors were in ; nevertheless, there was a fine living People amongst them, and they were in a thriving good Way, fundry young Ministers being very hopeful, both Men and Women.

I was at three Meetings in *Philadelphia*, exceeding large, more like Yearly-meetings than common First-day's Meetings ; after which I staid but two Nights, being in haste to reach a Yearly or Quarterly-meeting near 300 Miles farther North, at *Newport* on *Rhode Island* ; so I travelled from thence to *Burlington*, *Crosswicks*, *Stony-brook* and *Woodbridge*, and had Meetings at all those Places. Then to *Long-Island*, where I was at a Yearly-meeting, as they call'd it, at *New-town* on the First-day of the Week, and it was very large of both Friends and other People. Here I met with several of my former Friends, as *John Rodman*, *Hugh Copperthwaite*, *Samuel Bowne*, and fundry others, that had been of great Comfort and Support to me in my Imprisonment on that Island, and we were truly glad to see and enjoy each other in the Truth of the Gospel.

Thence I took my Journey through *Connecticut*, near two Hundred Miles, to *Rhode-Island*, and went round from *Newport* visiting the Meetings, as at *Secomet*, *Cockset*, *Dartmouth*, and back again to the Island, and so to the Quarterly-meeting at *Newport*, which was very large and continued three Days. In it I was largely drawn forth to the Elders and Ministers, there being pretty many of them, and had very good Satisfaction in all their Meetings. Thence back to a Monthly-meeting at *Dartmouth*, which was very large ; but a Narrowness of Spirit did some Hurt amongst them, and produced some Uneasiness, which I endeavoured to remove, which was chiefly occasioned by a young Man's being, as some thought, too much in the Fashion, altho' plain, compared with some others ; yet some thought this Reason sufficient to refuse his

Proposal of Marriage among them, although well recommended from the Monthly-meeting where he was a Member ; upon which I shewed them, that as he was so well recommended by Certificate, they could not reject his Proposal according to our Discipline. The Meeting, after we had some farther Conference about it, let the young People proceed, and Matters grew easy, and the Cloud of Difference dispersed and vanished, which was like to have hurt both Monthly-meetings.

From thence I went about five Miles to *Joseph Russel's*, in order to take Shipping for the Island of *Nantucket*. We met with some Difficulty in the Passage, and were obliged to put into the Island call'd *Martha's Vineyard*, but had no Meeting in it. After landing on *Nantucket* on the Sixth-day of the Week, Notice being given, the next Day we had a very large Meeting in the Forenoon, and on First-day it was much greater, especially in the Afternoon ; and the Inhabitants generally inclining to Friends, there was great Love and Unity amongst them. I then desired a select Meeting of the Elders, to whom I had something in particular relating to *Discipline* and the *Ministry*, which was of good Service and well accepted. After which I staid two Meetings more, and visited sundry Families on the Island, and then took shipping back again, was two Nights on board, and being in an open Boat, and the Weather very hot, it was tedious ; several of the Island came with us, and we landed at *John Russell's* ; and from thence (having *Nathaniel Starbuck* with me) we came to a small Meeting call'd *Seepecan*, and so to *Suckenaset*.

Here a Man gave some Uneasiness, by raising Objections against the *Light*, as not being *universal*, rendring the Doctrine, as he would expound it, against *Reason*, urging, that the natural Consequence must hold forth *as many Christs as People*, that were enlightened by him. To which I answered, by alluding

to the natural Sun, which enlightens the Earth, and every Dwelling, so that we frequently say, when the Rays of Light from the Sun come into the Room, *the Sun shines into it* ; but the Sun is not therefore divided, but 'tis the same Sun which enlightens the House here, that does the same to another elsewhere : *Even so is the Light of Christ* : He is the true Light that enlightens every Man coming into the World. Thus expounding and illustrating the Doctrine of the Light, the People who were but a few, seemed much affected therewith. I had also in my Doctrine that Day laid down, the Kingdom of God or of Heaven to be *within*, and that it was equally *universal* with the Light ; but at that he cavilled likewise, but made nothing of it, for I had it upon me to open and set forth what the Kingdom in this Place meant, and how it ought to be understood, plainly shewing, that by the *Kingdom of Heaven* was meant the *divine Seed* in the Heart, otherwise called the *Grace of God*, which, as every one makes it the Rule of their Actions, both in a moral and religious Conduct, it teaches us our Duty to God and one another, by which we are brought under the Government of Christ, and thereby made Partakers of that Peace within, which may be justly term'd the *Kingdom of Heaven within*. So the Objections thus made by this forward Man, tho' weak and impertinent, gave me an Opportunity to explain the Doctrine of the Gospel more clearly ; for altho' such Objectors seldom intend any Good, yet Good often comes out of their Objections.

From thence I travelled to *Sandwich, Yarmouth, Scituate*, and then to a Meeting where *Michael Wanton* lived, and so for *Boston*, visiting the Meetings to *Lynn, Marblehead* and *Salem* ; but nothing happened at any of these Meetings worthy of Note. I came then to *Newbury*, the Town which I mention'd in my first Journey, but there were very few Friends here now, not above nine or ten in all. The People had Notice,

but the Room was very small, and the Priest came, and did all he could to hinder the People from coming in, and made a very great Noise concerning the Danger of our Principles and Doctrines. I endeavoured to press him to shew *wherein*; but he evaded that as much as possibly he could, and charged in *general*; but by being closely press'd upon, at last he pitch'd upon our *denying* the *Scriptures*, *Baptism* and the *Supper*, and the *Resurrection* of the *Body*. I bid him hold, and first prove that we *denied* the *Scriptures*, and so the rest in order, as they came in course: For I asserted, that *we owned the Scriptures*; and he said, *we did not*: And I demanded Proof of him, otherwise he must be concluded a false Accuser. He went about it, but could make nothing of it. When he had said what he could, I told him, his Accusation in this Point relating to the *Scripture* must be *false*, for that it was publickly known, that both in our Preaching, and also in our Writings, frequent Recourse was had to the *Text*, to prove our Doctrine, and this must be a plain Demonstration and Proof, that we owned the *Scriptures*. The People allowed this to be right: And he coming so lame off at first, would proceed no farther in that publick Manner, but would have me go to his House, and talk these Matters over in his Closet. I told him his Meeting-house was more proper for such a Conference than his Closet, and there I would meet him when he pleased; for I told him, that I had heard that he treated the Doctrines held by us, in his Pulpit, very unhandsomely, where he knew none dared to oppose him, and if he would clear these Things up, I should be pleased with an Opportunity to hear him do it in as publick a Way as he had defamed us, either to make Proof of his Charges, or retract them; but he would not permit any such Things: He had charged Friends with *denying the Scriptures*, *Christ*, the *Resurrection of the Body*, and that we pretended to *Revelation now*, although, as he said, it was ceased some Generations

rations since. But he being a hot, weak Man, just set up in his Trade, did by this Way endeavour to ingratiate himself into the Minds of the People, but he lost Ground by it greatly, so that as he could make nothing of it but Noise and Tumult, we parted ; and I was told, that some of his own People blamed him much, for the Interruption he gave me, and for endeavouring to hinder the People from coming to hear for themselves.

From thence I went to *Aimsbury*, and *Hampton*, and it being their Monthly - meeting, I was concerned to stir up Friends to keep a faithful Record of all their Sufferings, to be made use of as Occasion might require, the Priests Hearers having made Spoil of Friends Goods to support their own false Ministry, with which some People were so uneasy and oppress'd, that Complaints in almost every Township appeared against them.

From thence I came to *Dover*, and it was their Monthly-meeting likewise : They were very raw, and managed their Affairs but indifferently, chiefly occasioned for want of some better Hands to write and keep their Books in Order. I was likewise concerned here to put them upon recording their Sufferings, and in a Way how to do it ; for they were Sufferers not only on Account of the hireling Preachers, to maintain them in their Pride and Idleness, but also on the Account of bearing Arms, which was likewise pretty heavy upon them in some Towns ; but in others their Neighbours were moderate, and made not much ado about them : But some did comply to pay off their Quota about bearing of Arms, who would not pay a Doit to the Parson, they seeing very clearly, that they were wrong, and preach'd themselves, and for themselves. We had a fine agreeable Time in Conference, and there appeared both great Sincerity and Innocency amongst them ; I was at their First-day Meeting, which was very large, and to great Satisfaction.

faction. After Meeting, finding that some Misunderstanding was amongst them about the Building of a Meeting-house, we got them together, (my dear Friend *Nathaniel Starbuck* from *Nantucket* being still with me) and we endeavoured to perswade them to Peace and Love, in which we were successful: We appointed a Meeting to be held there, which was attended by all, or the greatest Part of Friends of that Monthly-meeting, and a fine comfortable Opportunity we had, and they seemed all very easy and reconciled one to another.

Thence I went to *Strawberry-bank*, otherwise called *Portsmouth*, but it proved an unsuitable Time, because all the Country was come together, the Military Part especially, with all their Arms and Accoutrements of War, to proclaim King *George* the Second, (News being come three Weeks before, that his Father died on his Way to *Hanover*) and also on Account of the Peace that was concluded with the *Indians*: However, notwithstanding the vast Crowd and Hurry, we had a very quiet, though but small Meeting; and Notice being whispered, that there was to be a Marriage at *Dover* on a Day appointed, many in Curiosity came to it, and the People seemed much pleased with our Way of Marrying, few of them having been at any before. All ended quiet, without any Dispute. Then we had another Meeting at the new Meeting-house, after which I found a Concern to desire an Opportunity with the Ministers and Elders, which was very readily granted; and I was much concerned to request and advise both the Ministers and Elders, to endeavour to keep in the Unity of the Spirit amongst themselves, that they might be good Examples to the Flock, over which they were to watch, and to be ready and willing to administer good Counsel, which the Apostle calls *feeding of the Flock*; and this he recommends to the Elders as their Business: And that the Ministers look well to their Gifts, carefully avoiding either to abridge
or

or enlarge in their Ministry beyond the true Opening of Life in themselves, labouring with Diligence and Humility to evince the Truth of their Words by their own Conduct, that no Blemish or Spot might appear amongst them, nor any just Ground to reproach them with teaching others what they did not practice themselves, being careful in Conduct, that their Words and Actions might be agreeable; this would give Authority to their Ministry, and attract Honour and Respect from their Hearers.

From thence I went to visit the Widow *Hanson*, who had been taken into Captivity by the *Indians*, an Account of which I took from her own Mouth, being in Substance as followeth: ‘Eleven naked *Indians* came with Violence upon the Family, and killed two of the Children just as they entered the House; two little Boys more being at Play behind the House, when they heard the Noise, came running in great Surprise, the younger of whom could not be prevailed with to moderate his Grief, whereupon one of the *Indians* with a *Tombawk* (a little Hatchet) struck him on the Head and killed the poor Child, to rid themselves of the Noise, and to prevent their being discovered, and to strike the greater Terror upon those in the House. Then they rifled the House of what they thought proper to carry away. They took the poor Woman, who had lain in but two Weeks, along with them by Force and Violence, with her little Infant, and two Daughters, one Son, and a Servant-maid; it being in the Afternoon, the *Indians* were in a great Hurry to force them away as far as they could that Night, for fear of being pursued, and the Prisoners retaken. Thus they travelled for twenty Days, passing through many Lakes and Rivers; notwithstanding which they took no Cold, but their Health was preserved.’ The incredible and severe Trials the poor Woman and her Children went through, during their

their Captivity, I cannot here describe to the full, in all which they were remarkably favour'd by Providence, induring hard Labour, though they were drove to very great Straits for want of Provisions, being necessitated to eat old Bear and Beaver-skin Match-coats, first singeing the Hair off. After my Return to *Europe*, I saw at *Dublin* a Relation of this extraordinary Affair in a printed Narrative, which was brought over by a Friend from *America*.

Now being easy to leave these Parts for the present, I returned towards *Hampton*, but in the Way had a comfortable Meeting at a Town called *Stratham*, and so to *Hampton*, *Aimsbury*, *Haveril* and *Newbury*, the Place where the Priest had before given us so much Disturbance; but altho' he had Notice of the Meeting, he came not, and but a very few of his People; it was but a small Meeting, yet peaceable.

Then I returned to *Lynn*, where there was a Yearly-meeting, which was very large, and I had good Service in it. Then to *Salem*, it being their Yearly-meeting for Worship, and Quarterly-meeting for Discipline, which was exceeding large; they had a Meeting of Ministers and Elders, in which I was much enlarged in Advice to both: Then came on the Quarterly-meeting, in which, for want of better Writers and Method, they were somewhat deficient in their Business, whereby it became tedious to themselves; I endeavoured to put them in a better Method, which they took very kindly and well: And after this was ended, a Parting-meeting of Worship came on, which was very large, and was attended by abundance of *Presbyterians* and other People: I was very much drawn forth into various Branches of Doctrine, and the Meeting ended well; no Cavil or Dispute arising, which they are but too liable to. I was informed, that what I had delivered was taken down in Writing, but I never saw it, though a Friend afterwards had the Sight of it, and the Writer said, he did it with
a View

a View to have it printed by Subscription, and get something by it.

Not finding myself clear, I returned back with Friends to *Haveril*, and next Day had a comfortable little Meeting: Thence to *Hampton* and *Dover*, it being Yearly-meeting there: They have in almost every Place once a Year a General-meeting, which they call a Yearly meeting, and by this popular Title abundance more People come together, in Expectation of something extraordinary there to be met with; it held two Days, and was to very good Content. Next Day I had a Meeting on *Killery-side*, in an old Meeting-house which the *Presbyterians* had erected, but not being in so convenient a Place for them, they had left it. Many, both Friends and others came, and before it was quite gathered, the Priest with a large Company came in, and immediately began to pray, continuing a long Time: But as soon as he had done, I spoke to the People with some Authority, which seem'd to daunt the Priest, who it was thought intended to have taken up all the Time himself, and to have put us by; if he had succeeded, they would have gloried and triumph'd much, but therein they were disappointed. In the Course of my Ministry, I insisted on the Danger of *neglecting* the Work of our Salvation, speaking cautiously, that such an *Omission* might be *irreparable*. The Priest replying, said, that should be express'd, *will be irreparable*. I desired him not to disturb us, for we did not him; and repeating my Words over again, with this Addition, I dare not speak *conclusively* of the Mercy of God, who is able by Christ to save us at the *Hour of Death*. After this he was silent, only writing when he thought he had any Room to cavil, but he was soon weary, for I was very strong both in Power and Doctrine, and great Tenderness was among the People, which was strange to him, and Scripture came very apt to confirm my Doctrine; the Priest growing weary would stay no longer, but walked off,
 inviting

inviting the People to go with him, but very few went. We had a very good, serviceable Opportunity, and the Meeting ended very quiet and well.

Next Day I went to *Portsmouth*, having been there before at an improper Time, but now we had an excellent Meeting; then I was at the new Meeting-house, about which they had some Uneasiness; and we had a Meeting to very good Satisfaction, and Friends appeared well reconciled.

Then I went once more to visit the Widow *Hanson*, who had, as is before related, been taken Captive. From thence to *Stratbam*, having had a Meeting there two or three Weeks before, and the People were then very much affected: But the Priest hearing of it, was very uneasy, and went amongst his Hearers, begging and praying them not to converse with the *Quakers*, if they could avoid it, so that we had but few that came; amongst whom was a Man in Drink, that did cavil, and would pretend to a Disputation, but he was so much in Liquor that he rambled in his Discourse, and knew not what he said; he went away in a Rage, cursing as he went along. Thence I came to *Hampton*, and *Aimbury*, and had Meetings at both Places. Thence to *Newbury* and had a Meeting, to which the Priest was again invited, but he did not come near us. Next Day I was at their Monthly-meeting, which was but dull. Next Day I was up in the Woods, at a new Place, where there were many People, and we had a good Meeting. Next Day I was at a Marriage, which was held in a *Presbyterian* Meeting-place, being a very commodious, handsome House, and would contain near two Thousand People, as some said; however, it was as full as it could well contain, and the Meeting was very easy and quiet: Sundry Teachers from the neighbouring Towns were there, and I was doubtful of some Jangling and Dispute, but all went off very quiet and well: I was largely opened to set forth the Service of our Monthly-meetings, with respect to
taking

taking Care of the Poor, deciding of Differences, and taking Cognizance of Marriages : At which the People seemed pleased, wondering that they had no such Order amongst them : This was a very high Day, and ended well.

Next Day I went to *Lynn*, and had sundry Meetings at fresh Places about *Lynn*, *Marblehead*, *Salem*, and in several little Villages towards *Boston* : Taking my Leave of Friends in that Part of the Country, I came to *Boston*, and had two Meetings there. Then I went to *Mendam*, *Providence*, and *Swansey*, alias *Wickapinsett*, and had Meetings ; and then to *Scituate* Yearly-meeting, which held two Days, but nothing happen'd uncommon, save that the Parting-meeting at *Pembroke* was very large, very open, and to good Satisfaction : I had a small Meeting at *Hanover* and *Free-town*, and so back to *Wickapinsett* again, and then for *Rhode-Island* Quarterly-meeting : The first Day I had something to say to the Ministers and Elders about the *Discipline of the Church*, warning them to look diligently to the Flock ; and letting them know, that the Apostacy was partly occasioned through the Ministers and Elders neglecting their Duty, &c. Next Day was the Meeting of Ministers and Elders, and I was very much drawn forth to both. Then I had a Meeting at *Providence* middle Meeting-house, which was small, but pretty well. Then by *Mendam* I went to *Leicester*, and had a sweet good Time with a few seeking People, and in the Evening I had a long Conference with a young Woman about the *Sabbath*, the *Sacraments*, (so call'd) and some other Points ; in all which she seem'd very tender, and in a good Frame. I told her, I would not treat her as a Disputant, in an adverse Temper, but as a Sister and Friend in the same Faith in Degree : But she complained much of the Bondage of her Education, and lamented her Case.

From

From thence I went to *Oxford*, where was no Meeting settled, or any Friend in the Place; the Priests, did all that in them lay to hinder the People from coming to hear Friends, when any came amongst them, if they knew it; however, we had a good Opportunity. Thence to the Meeting in that great House, not far from *Seth Aldrick's*, which was a fine, full, and comfortable Meeting. Then to the upper Meeting-house, and so to *Moshantatuck*, and to *Warwick*, and had Meetings in those Places. I was here desired to stay to attend a Dispute. One *Hugh Adams*, a Priest, had challenged Friends, he having undertaken to prove *Infant-sprinkling* from Scripture, to be an Ordinance from Christ. But in the Proof he came off very lamely, *Samuel Aldrich*, an excellent and ingenious Disputant, was by Appointment to manage the Argument on Friends Side, and none else: But such Arguments the Priest brought for their *Sprinkling* as were entirely new to the Audience; one was, the *Spray* of the Red Sea, when the Children of *Israel* went through it, by the Strength of the Wind *sprinkled* the Children, viz. Infants as well as old People; and as the Apostle said, *They were all baptized in the Cloud, and in the Sea*. This was full Proof of the Point for *Infant-sprinkling*, he said. But *Samuel* made an excellent short Discourse on the Text, very much to the Purpose, and he had so much the Ascendant in the Argument on every Branch, that the Priest lost Ground, and several of his Brethren being there, were much ashamed of him.

Then I returned back to *Rhode-Island*, and so to *Cockset* Yearly-meeting, which was very large; and then to *Dartmouth* Yearly-meeting, which was likewise very large, and that Evening was at a Meeting of Ministers, wherein I had much to say on sundry Heads proper to them: And next Day being the Yearly-meeting, it was very large, as before, there being a great Resort of People many Miles round. It held
three

three Days, and ended to the Satisfaction of most. This Evening, as I was going to Bed, about ten at Night, there was an exceeding great Earthquake, that made a Noise like the driving of Carts or Waggon on an uneven Causeway ; it continued about two Minutes, to the great Surprize of the People. It was felt about fifteen Hundred Miles, as was after computed, and as was thought by Calculation, was not quite three Hours in going that Space.

From thence I went into the Island, and took my last Farewel of my Friends in that Part of the Country, having made a thorough Visit amongst them. The Weather by this Time grew very cold, it being the Beginning of the Ninth Month ; however, I proceeded to *Connecticut*, *James-town*, *Kings-town*, and to *Greenwich* Monthly-meeting. From thence *Seth Aldrich*, *John Casey*, *John Earle*, and *Peleg Spencer*, accompanied me, and we travelled into the *Presbyterian* Country ; and first, at a Town called *Preston*, we had a small Meeting, and hearing of a Funeral about three Miles off, we went thither ; the People (who, as we apprehended were *Baptists*) seemed much surprized, and our not joining a young Man who prayed amongst them, made them look more shyly on us ; and the poor Man seemed in Confusion : But when he had done, we had a fine Opportunity to good Satisfaction. Then we took our Journey towards *New London*, and on the Way had a small Opportunity amongst some *Presbyterians* ; such of them who were bigotted that Way, were hard to speak to about the *inward Work*, they could not receive it. Thence to *New London* on *Gratton* Side, to one *James Smith's*, who was one of *Rogers's* Kind of *Baptists*, but his Wife was convinced, and they were under great Persecution by the *Presbyterians*, both in Body and Goods.

I had a Meeting at *John Rogers's* on *New London* Side, and he objected against the *Universality* of the Light that saves, and about Baptism ; he had much

to say for the Continuance of Water-Baptism, but at the same Time would allow, that there was *no real spiritual Benefit* in it at all ; and he asserted, that that Light which condemns for Evil, was but the Tree of Knowledge, and *not saving* ; but Christ's Light which saves, was *another Thing* ; endeavouring hereby to divide between the Light that *condemns*, and that which *saves*, making them two different Principles from each other. I took the Bible, and turning to the first of *John* the Evangelist, shewed him, that the Light there spoken of, as the Divinity of Christ the Saviour of the World, was the same Principle that *condemned* the Disobedient, and *justified* the Righteous ; the Principle was not divided in itself, nor was it two Principles, but one and the same in all : And tho' the Operation of this one Light differed, that Difference, it was plain, was not in the Light itself, but in the different Object on which it did operate ; as for Example, the same Heat of the Sun that *softens* Wax, will *harden* Clay ; but this argues not two different Qualities in the Heat of the Sun, though the Effect of its Heat is different on Wax and Clay : By which (although this, or but few Allegories will hold throughout) the People saw, that his *Notion* of two different Lights, one *saving*, the other *condemning*, had no Foundation in the Text. Then as to *Baptism*, he divided the Institution into three Parts ; *first*, from *John* ; *secondly*, from the Apostles *practising* it ; and *thirdly*, from *Mat. xxviii. 19.* But I told him, as he had already allowed that there was no real spiritual Advantage in outward Water-Baptism, his imaginary Division of the Institution fell of course ; for 'twas against Reason to suppose any Thing *ordained* or *instituted* by Christ, to be used in his Church by Believers, could be of no *real Service* ; but thou allowest that Baptism with Water is of no *real Service*, therefore it's *no Institution* of Christ : But to conclude this Head, we may comparatively with the Apostle say, That it's not
the

the outward Part of Christianity, or Baptism, will do any good to Believers, but in Reality he is a *Christian* that is one inwardly: And Baptism is that of the Heart, and not that in the Letter, that is really serviceable and saving. Thus we ended this Conference; but he was full of Words, and confused in his Notions.

I had then another Meeting at Gratton, though but small; after that we had an Evening-meeting at one John Wood's, which was the best we had amongst that People, where some Objections were made against publick Prayer, but their Objections were soon removed. And afterwards at Colchester and Hebron we had some good Meetings amongst the People, though it was very difficult to get a Place to meet in at the former: But a Man of Resolution offered a Place, and there being a Town-meeting that Day, we had a large Company, who were very sober, no Cavilling or Disputes in the least. Then we came to Seabrook and Killingworth, and had Meetings amongst a People who had separated themselves from the Presbyterians, and inclined to the Baptists, and were getting into a lifeless Form of singing, and expounding in their own Way and carnal Manner, which was likely to be a Snare to their Hurt: We appointed another Meeting amongst them, which was but small, all my Friends save John Casey and John Earle having left me.

We now set out for New-York, but had no Meeting till we came to Rye, which was about 81 Miles. I was glad and comforted to be amongst our Friends again, having been so long from them, they being much more agreeable to me than other People. From thence I went to Marrineck, and over the Ferry to Flushing, it being their Quarterly-meeting, which held three Days, and the Meeting of Ministers and Elders was of good Service, among whom were some young Ministers; at this Quarterly-meeting we had a solid Time, a large Appearance of young Friends of both Sexes being there. After this Meeting I went with Joshua Fielding

a little on his Way to the Eastward ; and on returning, I went to visit a Friend that was much afflicted with Lowness of Spirits, and in a despairing Way, although he had from his Youth been a very sober and orderly Man ; but Providence having favoured him with considerable Substance, he imagined he transgressed in having every Thing too fashionable and too rich, and that he did not serve his Maker with his Substance as he ought to have done ; this was a great Load upon him.

From thence I visited *Westbury* on the Plain : Thence to *Sequalogue*, *Hurtington*, and *Oyster-bay*, and had good and very full Meetings. Thence to *Martinicock*, and to *Hempstead*, where I had but middling Times, tho' very large Meetings : I was rather more shut up than I had been for some Time before ; and being desired to go and give the poor despairing Friend another Visit, I went, and found him much out of Order, which made it unpleasant to be with him.

From thence I went to *Hempstead* and *Jemeca*, the Place where I had been so long a Prisoner twenty Years before, and had Meetings at both Places, but the latter was very small for want of due Notice. Then to *Flushing* Monthly meeting, which was much to my Comfort, not having had so good a Meeting for some Weeks before. I here receiv'd some Letters from Friends at the Eastward, which gave me some agreeable Accounts of the Effect that my Labours had had, by inclining some to come to our Meetings who did not before, in several Places where I had Meetings, there being a Prospect of some coming nearer to the Truth and joining the Society ; withal informing me of the great Earthquake before noted, how that at *Newbury*, *Haverill*, *Aimsbury*, and Places adjacent, it continued for fourteen Days, and was felt a long Way on the Banks of *Maramack-River* ; the Account was confirm'd by many who felt it, who declared themselves afraid to remain in their Houses during

during the several Shocks, which returned every twenty four Hours, continuing about the Space of three Minutes. The Inhabitants did much blame themselves for their Pride and Luxury, taking this to be a Judgment upon them for those Things.

I then went back to visit *Westbury, Hempstead, Rockway*, and had Meetings in all those Places, and to *Jemeca* again, where we had a large open Meeting, and those my old Neighbours, among whom I had been Prisoner in my first Journey, came generally and were glad to see me, as I was to see them, and we had a comfortable Opportunity together. After which I visited *New-Town, Flushing*, and the *Kilns by New-Town*, having a large Meeting; and so to *New-York*, where I had an Evening-meeting, not very large. From thence to the *Narrows over Stratton-Island*, and so to *Woodbridge*, where I had a Meeting, and about three Miles distant an Evening-meeting. Then to *Sbrewsbury* to their Week-day Meeting, which was small, but very agreeable. Then to *Masquan*, and back again to *Sbrewsbury* on First-day, where was a very large Meeting, and very serviceable. Thence to *Middle-Town*, where the *Baptists* lent us their Meeting-house to meet in, although they had given the Priest Leave to preach there that same Day, so that the Priest and his Hearers came some Time before our Meeting was ended, and enlarged it very much; no Cavil nor Dispute happened, but all ended quiet and well. Thence to *Freebold*, and had a Meeting in the Court-house to good Purpose; altho' the People were of an ignorant Sort, who made no Profession at all of any Religion, yet some of them were very well pleased with that Opportunity. Thence to *Allen's-Town* and *Croswicks*, and was at their Meetings: Then went to visit a Friend who sometimes appeared in publick, and there was a Difference in Sentiments about his Appearance, some approved and others disapproved his Ministry; but altho' the young Man had taken Offence at those who did not

like him, we got some of the most Disaffected together, and gave him a Visit, and by conferring together, the young Man and those who were dissatisfied came to a better Understanding, which was to all our liking. Thence to *Stony-brook*, and *Allen's Town*, and *Croswicks* again, to the new Meeting-house, and to *Mount-belly*, and had Meetings at them all to Content. Thence to one Meeting more, and so to *Haddonfield* Meeting, *Woodbury-Creek*, *Pilesgrove*, *Alloway's-Creek*, and to *Cobansley*; but the Weather being so excessive sharp with the Extremity of Frost, the Meetings were exceeding small. From thence to *Salem*, and had a very large open Meeting there, and thence to *Haddonfield* and *Philadelphia*, travelling over *Delaware* River upon the Ice above a Mile, and came to their Week-day Meeting, which was very small, by reason of the exceeding Sharpness of the Weather: It is almost incredible to think of the Hardness of the Frost in those Parts; a Man could scarcely bear any Part of his Skin uncovered, for fear of being froze.

I staid in Town over First-day, and from thence went to *Franckfort*, *German-Town*, *Abington*, and *Horsesham*, and so back again to *Philadelphia*, and staid their Meeting of Ministers, and was at three Meetings on First-day, which were very large and good, especially the first and last. Then I visited *Hertsford*, *Radnor*, *New-Town*, *Goshen*, and the Quarterly-meeting for the County of *Chester*, held at *Providence*, which was very large, especially the Meeting of the Ministers and Elders, (for there were there the greatest Part of the Ministers in the Province, and several from *Jersey* Side) it was the biggest Meeting of Ministers I ever was at in those Parts, the Time of the Year consider'd, and I was very much enlarged in Counsel and Advice to them, being never so opened on sundry Heads before; and in the Meeting of Business I was drawn forth to shew the Qualifications of a right and true Elder, and the Excellency of right Government

Government in the Church, which must first be known in our own Minds ; for such who have not the Government of their own Spirits, are not fit to undertake the Government of others. And after this I had a Meeting at *Middle-town*, and so to *Providence* General Meeting, but I had very little to say in either of these last Meetings. Thence to *Derby*, and had a small Meeting, and so to *Pbiladelphia*, and had a brave Meeting, infomuch that I was filled with Admiration at so uncommon a Supply of new Doctrine every Day, which gave me great Cause to be more and more humble ; and when some Friends would speak in Favour of such an Opportunity, or Branch of Doctrine, it would give me a Shock, lest by any of these unwary Commendations, I should take to myself that Honour which was due to the *Father of Spirits*, and so fall into a Robbery unawares.

From *Pbiladelphia* I went to *Plimouth, North-Wales, Buckingham, Wright's-Town, the Falls, Nesbaminy, and Bristol*, and had satisfactory Opportunities, tho' some more agreeable than others at each Place, and very full Meetings, the Season considered. From *Bristol* I went to *Burlington*, and was at their Meeting of Ministers, but had nothing to say ; I staid the First-day Meeting, which was very large and serviceable ; it was the Quarterly-meeting Time, and the Meeting of Ministers and Elders, and I having had such remarkable Times among the Ministers, occasion'd these Meetings to be very large : At this Meeting I was divinely opened with fresh Matter, setting forth the Service of a divine, spiritual Ministry, which was free from all Contrivance and Forecast of the Creature, in in preparing itself, either with former Openings, or beautiful Collections of Texts, or Sayings from Books or Writings, all which Gatherings would bring Death, and could be no other in the best and most favourable Construction, though well look'd on by some, than the Ministry of the *Letter*, under Pretence of the

Ministry of the *Spirit*, which is a Deception of the highest Nature.

Then I came into *Pensilvania* to *Wright's-Town*, was at their Meeting of Ministers, and had a very agreeable Time with them, wherein was shewn the Danger of Murmuring at the seeming Weakness of our Gifts, to a Degree of Dejection, and Neglect to exercise ourselves in them; shewing that every Gift of the Ministry was of great Service, though but small in comparison of others, and had a great Beauty in it, and that we ought by no means to slight and neglect it, but to think well, and be thankful that the Father of Spirits hath given us a Gift, though but small; And on the other hand, to exhort such as had a more elegant Ministry, not to overvalue themselves upon their Gifts, but in Humility and with thankful Hearts render the Honour and Praise where due, not looking with an Eye of Contempt on their supposed inferior Brethren and Sisters, but in Love preferring each other to themselves; more especially considering, that mean and plain Diet, handled by Persons who have clean Hands, and clean Garments, tho' but mean to look at, yet the Cleanness of their Hands and Garments, as also the Diet, tho' plain, put in decent Order, renders what they have to offer very agreeable and acceptable to the Hungry, and for others we need not be so careful. A Friend pleasantly said, after Meeting, at his Table, *I might freely eat, his Wife was a cleanly Housewife*, being willing to improve the Simile to her Advantage, she having something to say, though but little, as a Minister, and her Husband thought she did not give way to her Gift as she ought,

The next Day was Quarterly-meeting in the same Place, which was pretty large, and I was drawn forth to set the Degrees of Elders, as well as their different Services, in a proper Light, under the Similitude of the various Instruments made use of in the erecting of a Building, and that every Instrument or Tool had its proper

proper Service, when used as Occasion required, and every Builder to use them at a proper Time, and not otherwise. Thence I went over the River to the *Jersey* Side to one Meeting, that was large. Thence back to *Neshaminy* again, and to *Bybury*, *Abington*, *Horsbam*, *North-Wales*, and the great *Swamp*, and had a Degree of Service and Satisfaction in all these Places. Thence I went to *North-Wales* to a Funeral. Thence to *Perkcoming*, had a small Meeting, and in coming from thence had an Evening-meeting at a Friend's House, his Name was *John Jacobs*. Thence to a Funeral at *Plymouth*, where was a very great Company, and a very good Meeting. Thence to *Philadelphia*, and was at their Half-year's Meeting of Ministers and Elders: Sundry Friends came from *Long-Island*, and I was largely opened in it to recommend a stedfast Conduct with Justice and a single Eye to Truth, and its Cause at all Times, and to set forth the Service of Elders and Pillars in the Church, shewing how a Pillar standing upright would bear a great Weight, but if it leaned to either Side, it would bend, and perhaps break before it could be set upright again; warning both Ministers and Elders against Party-taking and Party-making, advising them as careful Watchmen to guard the Flock, as such who must be accountable for their Trust, and in particular, not to dip into Differences, the Ministers especially, either in the Church or private Families, but to stand clear, that they might have a Place with both Parties, to advise and counsel, that so they might be of Service in reconciling those who were at Variance: And I had a Concern to caution the Ministers, in their Travels, not to meddle with Differences, so as to rashly say, *this is right*, or *that is wrong*, but to mind their own Service, guarding against receiving any Complaints of Friends Unfaithfulness before a Meeting, which I had found very *hurtful* to me; for such Information, without a careful Watch, may influence the Mind to follow it rather

rather than the true Gift. I had it also to caution the Ministers, in their Travels, not to be hard to please with their Entertainments, but to shew themselves easy and contented with such as poor Friends could let them have, and to guard against carrying Stories and Tales from one Place to another; and that as soon as their Service was done, to retire Home again; for some, by staying too long after their Service was ended, had much hurt themselves, and been an Uneasiness to the Church. I had likewise to caution against appearing too often or too long in our own Meetings, but that Ministers should wait in their Gifts for the Spirit to put them forth; that they carefully minded their Openings, and not to go beyond Bounds, for if we did, we should lose our Interest in the Minds of Friends, and our Service would be lost; always guarding against seeking after Praise, or saying any Thing in Commendation of our own Doings, neither to be uneasy when we had nothing to say; as likewise to take Care, at such large Meetings, not to be forward nor too long, because a Mistake committed in such a Meeting, did much more Hurt than it might do in small Country Meetings. I likewise touch'd upon the great Duty of Prayer, requesting all to guard against running into too many Words without Understanding, but carefully to mind the Spirit, that they might pray *with it*, and with *Understanding also*.

Next Day was the Half-year's Meeting, being on the First-day of the Week, and I was largely opened to shew the Difference between the true and false Church, setting them Side by Side, that they might judge for themselves. I staid all that Week in Town, the Meeting not ending till Fourth-day. I was at the First and Third-day's Meetings following, and so took my Leave.

From thence I came to *Derby, Springfield, Merion, Chester, Chichester, Cresteen, and Newcastle*, and had tolerable good Meetings: Friends being acquainted that

that I was now taking my Leave of the Country, the Meetings were very large, and several of them to good Satisfaction, much Openness and Brokenness appearing amongst *Friends*. Thence to *George's-Creek*, *Duck-Creek*, *Motherkill*, *Hoarkills*, *Cold-Spring*, and so back to *Motherkill* and *Duck-Creek*; had pretty good Satisfaction in these Meetings: The *Friends* in these Parts were but seldom visited, and but very few publick amongst them. The *Priests*, both of the *Church* and *Presbyterians*, attempted to do something, but the People being poor, and Pension small, they gave out for want of Pay.

From thence to *Chester* in *Maryland*, where was an Half-year's Meeting, but the Weather being very unseasonable, made it but small; it continued two Days, and the last Meeting was both largest and best. Thence to *Cecil*, and back to *Gilbert Faulkner's*, and *John Tibbet's*, and *Duck-Creek*, had good Opportunities, and took my Leave after having one small Meeting about nine Miles distant, and so went for the Quarterly-meeting in *Maryland* at *Tread-haven Creek*, it was held in the great House; a good Meeting, but I found some Difficulties and Misunderstandings among them, which did them much Hurt. Next was at a Monthly-meeting in the same Place, where the Uneasiness appeared more plain, but Endeavours were used to reconcile Matters, and put a Stop to the Uneasiness. Thence to the *Bay-side*, *Tuckhow*, *Marchy-Creek*, *Choptank*, and had Meetings in all these Places. Thence to *Francequaking*, *Chickonacomaco*, *Nanticoke*, and over *Viana-Ferry*, to *Mulberry-Grove*, and had small, but comfortable Meetings in all these Places. Thence to the *Widow Gale's* at *Monay*, and had a small Meeting in her House. Thence to *Annuamefficks*, and had a small Meeting in the *Widow Waters's* House. Thence to *John Curtis's*, and had a small Meeting at his House; so to *Thomas Crippin's*, and had a Meeting in his House, there being no Meeting-houses in these Places:

Places : Then one Captain *Drummond* desired a Meeting in his House, which I assented to, and it was to good Content. This *Drummond* was a Judge of the Court, and a very sensible Man.

Thence to *Neswaddock*, where was a pretty good Meeting-house, and we had a very large and good open Meeting in it. Thence to *Maggoty-Bay*, and had a very good Meeting at *Edward Mifflin's*, a fine zealous Elder he was ; he carried me over the Bay in his Boat (about twenty Leagues they call'd it) to *Nansemund* ; we landed at old *Robert Jordan's*, and was at their Week-day Meeting.

From thence I went towards *Carolina*, *Joseph Jordan* accompanying me on my Way to *Nathan Newby's*, and his Son went with me to his Uncle *Gabriel's*. Next Day I went to *Pascotank*, and had a fine open Meeting, which was very large, for the Inhabitants mostly came to Meetings there when they expected a Preacher, and at other Times pretty much. I visited a young Man in the Neighbourhood, a pretty Minister, but in a declining Way ; we had a comfortable Time with him, he being in a good Frame of Mind, fit to die. Thence to *Little-River*, and to *Pequeman's* Booth, to the upper and lower Meeting-house, and had very large Meetings. Thence *Gabriel Newby* accompanied me towards *Virginia* back again ; the first Meetings we had were at the *Western-Branch*, *Pagan Creek*, and at *Samuel Savory's* ; we had a pretty comfortable Time at the last Place. Then to *Swan's-Point*, and over *James's-River* to *Williamshurgh*, and had a small Meeting at each of these last Places : *Joseph Jordan* being with me, we paid the Governor a Visit, and interceded for his Favour, on the Behalf of some Friends put in Prison on Account of refusing to train ; he was very kind, promising to do what lay in his Power for them, and our People in general, and in a little Time the Friends were set at Liberty.

We

We then went (*Joseph* being with me) to *Skeminbow* to the Widow *Bate's*, it was a Yearly-meeting at the Widow's House, which was pretty large and open. Thence to *Black-Creek*, and to *Curl's*, and had tolerable good Meetings. Then we had a Meeting of Ministers and Elders; there were but a few Ministers in those Parts, but we had a suitable Opportunity to good Satisfaction; and indeed it not often fell out, that in such Meetings I was in want of Matter suitable to their States. Next Day was the Publick-meeting, which was large and well. Next Day I was at *Wine-Oak* (these were all called Yearly-meetings) which was large and well, and *Joseph Jordan* had excellent Service in it, but I had very little to say. Thence to the *Swamp*, and to *Grassy-Swamp*, *Cedar Creek*, and *Dover*, and had fine Meetings, People being very ready to attend them; these Meetings were above the Falls of *James's-River* considerably. Thence back over the River to *Robert Honeycote's*, *Lemuel Hargrove's*, *Somerton*, and to *Nathan Newby's*; in all these Places I had Meetings, and some of them very large and open. From thence into *Carolina* to their Quarterly-meeting, and had a Meeting at *James Griffet's* House. Thence to *Little-River* on the Seventh-day of the Week, and first of the Quarterly-meeting: Next Day the Meeting was very large, and I took my Leave of Friends therein, and we had a baptizing Time together.

Then I returned back to *Virginia*, and was at *Nansemond* Meeting, and had a large Meeting at a Friend's House, whose Name was *Levin Buffkin*, it was a fine edifying Meeting indeed. Then I came to the *Branch*, and *Chuckatuck*, to their Monthly-meeting, but *Robert Jordan* had all the Time, that being his last Meeting, he intending to come to *England*, to visit Friends, in the same Ship with me. Another Meeting was appointed at *Arnold Wilkinson's*, which was small. After Meeting I went to old *Robert Jordan's*, having been made exceeding welcome, and also had several good Opportunities

Opportunities in the Family. I went to but two or three Meetings more, getting myself ready to return Home, and accordingly we took Leave, and came down the River to *Kickatan*, but were forced in sailing thither, by missing the Channel, to lie aground by *Newport's-Nose* near twenty four Hours before we could get to *Hampton*, and when there, staid about a Week and four Days. *George Walker* was very kind, invited us to lodge at his House, which we did about four Nights, and had a Meeting or two in his House, his Wife being more loving than I expected: She was *George Keith's* Daughter, and in her younger Days shewed great Dissatisfaction with Friends, but after her Father's Death the Edge of that Bitterness abated, and her Husband was very loving and hearty to Friends, frequently having Meetings at his House.

Having lain Wind-bound a Week and four Days, the Wind sprung up fair for us, and we weighed Anchor the 29th of the Fifth Month 1728, with a fresh and fine Gale; *Robert Jordan* seemed much pleased that we were on our Way, and a secret Joy fill'd my Heart, being thankful that I had been preserved so well in Health, and assisted with Strength, both of Body and Mind, to accomplish this long and tedious Journey, through the very severe Extrems of both Heat and Cold, in about eighteen Months, and missed but seven Meetings, which were far back in the Woods, viz. one in the Government of *New-York*, two in the *Jerseys*, and four in *Pennsylvania*: I was not easy to miss them, but my Friends thought the Weather and Season of the Year, together with the great Scarcity of Provision both for Man and Horse, and the great and thick Snow, with the Extremity of the Frost, render'd that Journey hazardous, it not impracticable, and to stay till the Winter broke up, I could not see it my Place; besides which, by staying so long I should have lost my Passage by the homeward-bound Ships, otherways I should have been willing to have taken those

those Meetings, if I could have saved my Passage, and accomplished it so as I might waste no Time, but go on diligently as I had done before, for there were but very few of their Meetings but that I visited two, three, and sundry of them four, five, or six Times, several of them being situated in my Way in passing to and fro. I was not by any Disorder or Sickness, or any Accident hindered (I think I may safely say) one Hour all this Time. Indeed Friends had sent Word to appoint a Meeting for me about thirty Miles on my Way, but the Weather was so extremely tempestuous, that when we came there, no Meeting was appointed, for it was concluded I could not possibly come, so I was under a Necessity to stay one Day longer in that Place, which was the greatest Hindrance I met with in all the Journey that I remember.

Now to return: In our Voyage, about 250 Leagues from Land as we thought, the Water seemed like a River after a hasty Storm of Thunder; on seeing it thus, our People were under a Surprise, and in that Surprise tried with the Lead for Ground, but could find none; it was so uncommon a Thing, that the Sailors could not tell what to think of it: This was about the 15th of the Sixth Month; we had fine pleasant Weather, and great Plenty of Dolphins and other Fish, for which Providence I was very thankful; but on the 22d of the same Month, about three in the Afternoon, an exceeding Gust of Wind, such an Hurricane as our Sailors said they never knew, came from the North, which bore so unexpectedly without any Warning upon us, that to all Appearance our Ship would be in a Moment swallowed up in the Sea, the Waves running over us, and the Water coming into the great Cabbin Windows and the Forecastle, so that from five or six Inches of Water in the Hold, it so increased, that we had more than so many Feet in a few Minutes; the Decks seemed as tho' they would break down, being so very heavy with the Waves breaking in upon them, they
also

also staved us above a Ton and a Half of Water in Casks fasten'd upon Deck, washed some Hogs overboard, and drowned us several Dozen of Turkeys, Geese, and other Fowls, which afterwards, with the Water and Swine, were much miss'd by us ; besides all this, the Wind tore our Sails like Paper, broke our Foretopmast, and several of the Yards, like rotten Sticks, and the round Foretop ; the Ship by the Violence of the Tempest lying so much on one Side, as tho' she would not right up again, so that they were for cutting away her Masts and Rigging, but I begged the Master not to do it, but to trust to Providence, for I was satisfied she would rise again as soon as the Wind abated : And the Wind began to abate in a little Time, and the Ship righted up, but the Tiller of the Rudder being broke, it was very dangerous until they had got the Rudder fastened, which in a little Time before it was dark, was effected with great Difficulty and Danger ; but the Sea running so very high, tost the Ship very much, and the Sea came in with so much Violence, that there was no Appearance of any Thing but foundering and sinking immediately, for some Time, especially till the Rudder was put to rights ; but when they had the Command of the Rudder there were some Hopes of Relief, but while the Rudder was at Liberty there was no commanding of the Vessel, but she lay at the Mercy of the Sea, and it seemed as though that would alone carry away the Stern of the Vessel, by being forced through the Violence of the Waves from one Side to the other : But when we had got up the dead Lights, and secured ourselves in the best manner we could, then all Hands to the Pump, for we found between seven and eight Feet of Water in the Hold, but as the tossing of the Ship made that very difficult to guess right, it might be more or less ; however, having a good Ship, new and firm, we found Hope increased, but we were all very wet, and very much fatigued, and a dark and troublesome Night it was, and we much longed for
Day,

Day, but the Wind was very much abated, not lasting above two Hours so very strong.

When Day-light came we were glad, but that was soon turned into Mourning, by discovering the mean State of our Ship, especially of the Rigging and Sails, and finding so great a Loss of Water and fresh Provision, Things of Value, next to Life itself: All these Losses put together were Cause of Trouble, but by grieving we could not help ourselves, therefore we could with the Psalmist, in something of the like Nature, say, such Trials put People to *their Wits End*; Psalm cvii. 27. howbeit, in turning the Mind to that divine Power and Providence which is present every where, ruling both by Sea and Land, and whom the Winds obey, I found Comfort in meditating on his Promises to care for those who put their Trust in him.

Now our Men, who were all preserved from any other Damage, saving the taking of Cold, which we all felt the Effect of to a great Degree, went about putting the Rigging to rights again, which took up a full Week before we could make Sail, the Wind blowing strong and variable; and when they had got Things in a good Condition, the Wind was against us for several Days, which made us thoughtful to take Care of what Water and Provision we had, that we might not be surprized with Want, when we had no Power to arm against it. Therefore the Men were all call'd up to hear a Proposal, which was thus; Three Pints of Water a Man for twenty four Hours, and five Pounds of Bread for a Man a Week, having other Provisions, both fresh and salt, a good handsome Stock, to the full Allowance. At this there was Uneasiness; but this Allowance would hold by our Calculation but for about four Weeks, so that if we saw not some Hopes of getting in in two Weeks, we must come to a less Allowance again.

The Wind continued still against us till the 7th of the Seventh Month, and then veered a little to the

M

Southward

Southward, and we apprehending ourselves to be too much to the North, were not willing, if we could avoid it, to put into *Ireland*: But in about three Days after this we had a brave Wind, which lasted for some Days, and it gave us Hopes of seeing Land, which we much longed for, being threatned with Want of Provision, of both Bread and Water, but not Flesh, if Providence did not interpose: Our Hearts were chearful, and Gladness appeared in every Countenance, but alas! it was but a short-liv'd Joy, for in the Forenoon on the 13th the Wind scanted upon us again, and about five in the Afternoon we founded, trying for Ground, but found none; this made us all look pale, and Sadness of Heart appeared in every Countenance; besides, our Ship being a dull Sailer, added somewhat to our Trouble, fearing that we were farther from Land than we thought by our Reckoning, and the greatest Comfort we had, was a good Ship under us, though a heavy Sailer, therefore we cheered each other with the Hope of gaining our Port in due Time with Safety and Comfort: And this I moralized to myself, by considering the Resemblance of a *Christian's* Progress through this Life, sometimes in a Degree of Prosperity, being under Encouragement to press forward with a fair Wind, and anon under as great Adversity and Discouragement by Temptations, Persecutions and Afflictions.

In two Days more we founded, and found Ground at eighty two Fathom, judging ourselves from the *Lizard* sixty Leagues; but alas! the Wind veered and blew seven Days strong against us, so that we were driven from Land, as we thought, a Hundred Leagues. This made us talk of shortening our Allowance again, but that Night about twelve o' Clock the Wind veered in our Favour, and the Sailors cried, *A large Wind, a large Allowance*; nothing being more disagreeable in its kind than a large Wind and short Allowance. And the Wind being fair, we went on with Cheerfulness, and

and upon the Credit of this fair Wind some of the Men had not a Morfel of Bread left by Night, nor a Spoonful of Water, though they had near thirty six Hours of their Week to come: However, we went along so agreeably, that every Body look'd pleasant, and it was comely to behold; but alas! this lasted but about sixteen Hours before it came right in our Teeth again, and blew very strong.

Such Ups and Downs we had, that the Sailors grew very uneasy, and did curse and swear, nay did not stick to blaspheme in such a Way, as made it very uneasy, and unpleasant to hear; but this did not last long before it was calm; after that the Wind came up fair again, and we speaking with a Ship outward-bound, they gave us new Heart, by telling us that *Scilly* bore from us North East about twenty two Leagues Distance. Also this Day we spoke with a King's Ship call'd the *Dragon*, come from *Jamaica*, and in the Evening saw sundry Ships coming in, which made it look very pleasant, besides a fine Gale in our Favour, so that on the 27th we saw the Land about five in the Evening, and a Ship to Windward bore down to us, and told us it was the *Lizard*, and we then judged that it bore E. N. E. from us about six Leagues Distance. Next Day the Wind was against us, turning in the Night E. N. E. so that we lost Sight of the Land again, but tacking and standing the other Way we soon saw it, and having the Tide under Foot, though but a scant Wind, we shot in a considerable Way, but after the Tide was spent we thought we lost Ground, but the Wind veering to our Advantage, and a better Gale, did help us much, so that on the 28th we shot pretty near in, thinking to have put into *Falmouth*, but the Wind being still more favourable, we stood for the * *Ramhead*; then it grew almost calm, so that what we got by the Flood we lost by the Ebb, and we could but just discern the *Eddystone* like the Mast of a Ship through a Glass, and scarcely at all with the naked

* A Piece
of Land so
call'd.

Eye ; but on the 29th, it being the First-day of the Week, having a fine Tide and good Wind all in our Favour, gave us some Hopes to get into *Plymouth* by Meeting Time, the very Thought of which was agreeable : But alas ! by eight in the Morning we found to our Sorrow, the Tide against us, and the Wind dying away, we lost Ground, but shortly after the Wind blew pretty strong and fair ; then we found we stem'd the Tide and got a little forward, and when the Ebb was spent, the Flood with the Wind came in very strong, though a neap Tide, so that we raised the Land very fast, and about two in the Afternoon came a-breast the *Eddystone*, about a Musket-shot from it, and had a full View thereof, going along with Pleasure. In about a Quarter of an Hour after this, Pilots came off, several Ships wanting safe Conduct, and about nine we got safe to an Anchor, just by the Passage against *Edgcombe* House, and on the 30th I landed at *Plymouth*, and staid in Town that Day, and was very thankful I was safe on shore again, having been just nine Weeks on our Passage, and the last five of it was a very trying and afflicting Time, but the four first were very pleasant and comfortable.

Being now on Shore amongst my Friends, I took Horse the 1st of the Eighth Month, and came to *Exeter* that Night. Next Morning, being the 2d of the Month and Fourth-day of the Week, I came Home, and as I entered my own House, oh ! the inward Comfort and Pleasure which I felt, ravish'd my Heart, that I could scarce forbear to cry out, *God ! that God who judgeth Men, is just in all his Ways, and rewardeth Peace into the Bosoms of those who fear and obey him.* And being by all my Family and Friends kindly receiv'd, made my Return exceedingly delightful.

In about twenty two Months and odd Days I finished this Journey, from the 22d of the Tenth Month 1726, to the 2d of the Eighth Month 1728, and in that Time I travelled by Land and over Rivers about
five

five Thousand three Hundred and twenty two Miles, besides passing and repassing the great Ocean ; and as I had been out of that Country somewhat more than twenty one Years, and found so great an Increase of the Professors of Truth, I had a Curiosity to examine a little into it, finding most of the old Meeting-houses very much enlarged, some to hold double, and some treble, and some four Times the People that the old ones would in my first going thither, and even now some wanted to be either enlarged, or new ones built at proper Distances ; besides the Account of new Houses built in that Time, in Places where were none, nor Meetings but what were kept in private Houses, which grew so numerous, that Necessity put them upon erecting Houses to accommodate themselves. In *New-England* and *Rhode-Island* are twelve : In the Government of *New-York* are six : In both *East* and *West-Jersey* are nine : In *Pensylvania* thirteen : In *Maryland* four : In *Virginia* nine ; and in *North-Carolina* three. In all, there have been fifty six new Meeting-houses built within these two or three and twenty Years past, and in these Provinces there are about ten Places more that want where they have none, and many old ones want to be enlarged, not having Room for Half the People. Now the extraordinary Increase of Professors is much to be attributed to the Youth retaining the Profession of their Parents, and marrying such : For indeed most of the People in *Pensylvania* are of this Profession, as well as in the *Jerseys*, and *Rhode-Island*, so that young People are not under the Temptation to marry such as are of different Judgments in Religion, as in some other Parts.

Now being safe returned Home, I was diligent in my Way, minding my Business, and attended publick Meetings, Funerals, &c. until the Year 1740, at which Time I found a Concern to visit some Parts of the *North*, and *Ireland*, which comes next in course, with respect to both Time and Place, viz.

*An ACCOUNT of my TRAVELS into the
North of England, and Ireland, the second Time,
in the Year 1740.*

AFTER having acquainted my Friends with what I had in View, requesting, as is usual in the like Cases, a Certificate from the Monthly-meeting, which was readily granted, I left my House the 1st of the Third Month 1740, and went to the Funèral of an intimate Friend, viz. *Thomas Cary*, of *Long-futton*, and the Meeting was very large and well. Thence I went to *Street*, and so for *Bristol* to the Yearly-meeting, which was attended by many Friends, and was very much to Satisfaction; I was largely opened both in the publick and select Meetings of Ministers and Elders. Leaving that Place I went to *Bath*, *Bradford*, *Melksham*, *Chippenham*, and *Caln* in *Wiltshire*, and had in all these Places Meetings to good Satisfaction, in some more than others. Thence to *Newbury*, *Reading*, *Wickham*, and *Uxbridge*, and had Meetings at all these Places, which were pretty well. Thence to *London* to the Yearly-meeting, where I was more particularly enlarged amongst the Ministers than ever I had been before in *England*, which gave me some Apprehension it was to be my last, and when I was taken sick, of which in its Place, it seemed to confirm it. I had likewise a very good Time in the Parting-meeting, which confirmed me that I was in my Place. From thence I went to *Hertford*, it was their Monthly-meeting, and I staid three Meetings in that Town. Thence to *Ware* and *Royston*, and had considerable Meetings in both Places. Then into *Essex* to *Saffron-Walden*, *Thackstead* and *Coggeshall*, and had tolerable good Times; so to *Colchester* Yearly-meeting, which

was

was very large, and I had the Company of *John Gurney*, and *Joshua Tost*, who both had very eminent Service in that Meeting,

I was here taken ill with a Cold, but had so good a Time amongst the Ministers, that I thought myself almost cured; but after Meeting riding to *Bury*, it brought such a *Fever* upon me, that I thought I could not survive it, and this seemed to confirm my former Apprehension, from that uncommon Enlargement I had amongst the Ministers in *London*, that I should never have another, and this Notion grew upon me, adding much to my Lowness of Spirits; however, I was obliged to tarry a Week with my Friend *John Drewett*, at *Bury*, and his Kindness and Tenderness over me in that low, weak Condition, was very great and comfortable; he conveyed me to *Mildenhall* in his Chair, but I was very weak, and obliged to stay at *Joseph Ellington's* one Week longer, who was likewise very kind and tender over me.

From thence I went to *Brand*, and through some Part of *Norfolk* into *Lincolnshire*, and had very large Meetings at *Lynn*, and at *Gainsborough* was a great Number at a Funeral, and Meetings at several other Places, which were large. I met my dear Friend *Joshua Tost* at *Lynn*, and he was with me at *Gedney*, and other Meetings between that and *Gainsborough*, and then we parted, and I went into *Yorkshire*, and had fundry large Meetings, considering the Places, as at *Leeds*, *Rowden*, *Bradford*, *Skipton*, *Settle*, and *Sedberg*; (at which last Place my Mouth was first opened in the Ministry) and on First-day to *Kendal*, and had two large Meetings, and then went directly for *Whitehaven* by *Cockermouth*, but had no Meeting till I came to *Dublin*, staying in *Whitehaven* but about two Hours.

I took Shipping the 1st of the Sixth Month 1740, and landed safe at *Dublin* on the 4th. I staid there two First-days, being under some Disorder, and from thence I went to *Drogheda* and *Munallen*, where I was

very particular about the Call and Qualifications of true Gospel Ministers, shewing, that wicked Men could not be such ; and thence to *Lurgan*, and had satisfactory Opportunities, *Michael Lightfoot* being there at the same Time. From thence to one Meeting between that and *Lisborne*, and so I went to the North as far as *Balluarrey*, and then returned back to *Toberhead*, *Old Castle*, *Cootbill*, visiting Meetings on that Side to *Limerick*, and so to *Clonmel*, *Youghall*, and to *Cork* to the Province meeting, and back to *Waterford* to a Province Quarterly-meeting at *Mountmellick*, visiting the Meetings round as I went to *Montrath*, *Edenderry*, and so to *Dublin* to a Marriage, where for some Time I had very hard Work, but it ended very well ; From thence I went into the County of *Wicklow*, and round by *Carlow*, visiting the Meetings round to the national Half-year's Meeting at *Dublin*, about the 11th of the Ninth Month.

I found in that Nation a brave, zealous and living People in the Root of true Religion and Discipline, or Church-Government, well qualified with Experience in divine Wisdom ; but there were also some who seemed very perfect in the *Form*, and appeared to the outward very exact and zealous against Pride and worldly Customs, but for all that, the *Inside was not right*, so that I found often very close Exercise amongst them, in warning them against the *Leaven of the Pharisees*, which was equally, if not more hurtful to Religion than that of the *Publicans* : And in some Places, shewing that it was needful to be good Examples in Plainness of Speech, as well as Apparel, which many had deviated from ; but nevertheless such there were, who though plain, and otherwise strict, were too much taken up with the *World*, and the *Riches* of it, making Haste to increase their Substance, which was a very great Hindrance to their Growth in the Life of Religion, and made them dwarfish therein ; setting forth, that a *Form*, without *Life*, whether by Education

tion or otherwise, would not avail ; also warning the Ministers in the Exercise of their Gifts, to keep to *the Spirit*, and mind carefully *their Openings*, and not to preach *the Letter*, under a Pretence of preaching *the Spirit*, and so instead of ministering *Life*, minister *Death* to the People. In the main, I had great Comfort, and many very good Opportunities.

I left that Nation full of Peace in my own Mind, being glad that I went thither : I was at eighty two or eighty three Meetings in it, and took shipping the 19th of the Ninth Month 1740, in Company with my dear Friend *Michael Lightfoot*, for *Workington*, and was but twenty four Hours on the Water ; it was a rough though very quick Passage : My Friend was very sick, and so was I also, but not to that Degree as he was. We hired Horses to go to *Whitehaven*, it being about six or seven Miles, and staid there till next Day, it being First-day, and had two Meetings, the last being very large. I visited all the Meetings in and about *Cockermouth*, and *Pardsay*, many of which were very large, and then by *Kiswick* to *Hawkshead*, where I was much comforted, being at Friend *Lancaster's* House at *Colthouse*, and had two Meetings there, which were very full.

Thence I went to *Kendal*, had no Meeting, but next Morning went to *Sedberg* to the General-meeting, which was small by reason of a deep Snow and very hard Weather. Thence to *Preston-Patrick*, and back to *Kendal*, but had no Meeting. Thence to *Crook*, and had a small Meeting, then back to *Kendal* to their Week-day Meeting, where was a Funeral. Thence I went to *Shap*, but it was very bad travelling by reason of the Snow and Frost. Thence to *Cumberland* Quarterly-meeting, by *Carlisle* and *Moorhouse* to *Wigton*, where it was held ; and considering the Season, it was very large, holding two Days : At a Meeting of Ministers and Elders held in the Evening, I was pretty much enlarged, as well as at the other Meetings. I then

I then returned back to *Penrith*, being accompanied by my Friend *Rowland Wilson* this Journey, who was of great Service to me, and my Friend *John Wilson* and his intended Son - in - Law met me at *Penrith*, where we had a very large Evening - meeting, to very good Satisfaction ; the Dissenting Teacher, with many of his Hearers were there, and it was very well. Thence to *Teril*, and to the Monthly-meeting at *Great Strickland*, and so by *Shap* to *Kendal*, where I was at three Meetings besides the Quarterly - meeting, and the Meeting of Ministers, all very large and satisfactory ; and the Weather was now much warmer. I took my Friend *John Wilson's* House for Home at *Kendal*, and *James Wilson's* at *Sedberg*, staid their First-day Meeting, and had an exceeding large Meeting in the Evening. That Meeting, with *Cockermouth* and *Whitebaven*, were three of the largest Meetings I had in the North that Journey. Thence to my old Friend *Robert Chambers*, and to *Preston* General-meeting, and dear *James Wilson* and his Wife met me there, it was a pretty large Meeting, but I was much shut up in it ; and after Meeting *James* and *John Wilson*, with *Robert Chambers*, and sundry others, accompanied me to the Quarterly - meeting at *Lancaster*, which began next Day, and was very large. These Quarterly-meetings of *Cumberland*, *Westmoreland* and *Lancashire*, were three of the largest that I remember to have been at, one after the other, in so short a Time, and they had an excellent Oeconomy in the Management of their Affairs ; but there was no Meeting of Ministers at *Lancaster* at this Time. It may be said, I think very justly, that these three Counties are in a thriving Way in the very Life of Religion and true Godliness.

Having receiv'd a Line from my dear Wife, that she was weakly, and wanted me to return, prevented my visiting the North as I had in View, so that from *Lancaster* I had no Meeting till I came to *Manchester*, where I had two good Meetings. Thence to *Stockport*,
Macclesfield

Macclesfield and *Leek*, and had small Meetings at each Place. Thence to *Birmingham* and had two Meetings, the last a Funeral, pretty large, but not so edifying as I could have desired it. Thence to *Worcester*, *Gloucester* and *Bristol*, and had Meetings at them all to very good Satisfaction, especially at *Worcester* and *Bristol*.

In this Journey I travelled in *Ireland* (exclusive of the Sea) six Hundred and seventy eight Miles, and in *England*, before and after my Return from *Ireland*, nine Hundred and Thirty, which in all is sixteen Hundred and eight Miles; and save my Illness at *Bury*, had my Health as well as I could expect, being humbly thankful, that I was so strengthened both inwardly and outwardly to accomplish my Journey so well, not having, that I remember, left any Thing undone in that Nation, save something I had to say in the Mens Meeting at *Dublin*, but their hasty breaking up prevented it, which gave me Uneasiness for some Weeks after, and I remark it here for a Caution to others; for I mist such an Opportunity as I could never more expect to have, and this added to my Uneasiness. Thus I saw that my Fear of breaking in upon the Meeting, and hindering their Business, made me lose my Time, so that I came off with a Burden upon my Mind.

*An ACCOUNT of my TRAVELS since the
Decease of my Wife, who after a lingering Illness
departed this Life the 6th of the Third Month
1746.*

I Set out from my House the 27th of the Fourth Month 1746, towards the Quarterly-meeting at *Liskard* in *Cornwal*, which in that County and *Devonshire*, are usually call'd Yearly-meetings, and had two small Meetings in the Way, viz. at *Collumpton* and *Oak-bampton*; thence to *Launceston*, where we had a very large Meeting, the Place consider'd, the People being very sober and attentive, and the Doctrine of the Gospel flow'd freely to them; I was much comforted with that Meeting: Thence to *Liskard* to the Quarterly-meeting, which by reason of the Unseasonableness of the Weather, was smaller than usual, there being few besides Friends, but Things were tolerably well; and from thence to *Plymouth*: Friends of both Counties attend these two Meetings. After which I had a Meeting in the Evening at a Parish, where I think but one Family of Friends dwelt, we had a tolerable good Meeting, many People came to it; thence to *Kingsbridge*, and so for *Exeter*, and was at their Week-day Meeting, but had nothing to say; so by *Collumpton* to *Chard*, and then Home, where I staid until it was Time to set out for the Yearly-meeting in *Gloucestershire*, held at *Hampton-Road*, which being well supplied by sundry able Ministers attending, it was thought to be of good Service.

I returned by *Bath*, *Froome* and *Sbampton-Mallet*, had three Meetings at *Bath*, one at *Froome*, and one at *Sbampton*, all to very good Satisfaction, and then Home, where I staid some Time; but finding the Constraint
of

of Love to visit *London*, I waited to be clearly satisfied in the Undertaking, and was not easy to go till the 20th of the Eleventh Month.

I went by *Bristol*, and the Meetings were very large, I staid two First-days, and had very good Satisfaction in being there; then I went for *London* through *Wiltshire*, and had a tolerable satisfactory Opportunity in the Evening at *Chippenham*, where sundry Strangers came in; next to *Caln*, and had a Meeting there also, but not quite so satisfactory; thence to *Marlborough*, and had a very open Time, many Neighbours came who were very sober and attentive; thence to *Newbury*, and had a small Meeting; thence to *Reading*, and was there on First-day both Morning and Afternoon, and had good Satisfaction; thence to *Maidenhead*, where sundry Friends from *London* met me; from thence I went to a Meeting at *Uxbridge*, appointed for *Hannah Harris*; from thence to *London*, and was in Town four Weeks. In five First-days I visited all the Meetings, and some of them sundry Times over, and had sometimes great Satisfaction and Comfort, but at other Times I was very low, and under great Poverty of Spirit; the First-days were hard Service: The Evening-meetings at *Grace-church-street* were very open, and the Gospel flowed to them very plentifully, at which Meetings vast Variety of Hearers frequented, of different States and Professions, but the Fountain being opened, there was a Supply suitable to their Conditions.

After I was clear of the City, sundry Friends accompanied me to *Essex*, where we had a small but pretty open Meeting; thence to *Guildford*, where we had a very small and poor Meeting. I queried, why they did not give their Neighbours Notice? To which they answered, *they did not use to do it*. There is a very great Remissness amongst our People in this Respect, for if they were diligent, and desirous to have the Company of their Neighbours, where the Minister is

so concerned, it might be of great Service to them. I went from thence to *Godalmin*, where we had a very large and open Meeting; thence to *Alton*, and had two very agreeable Meetings; so to *Winchester*, where were but a few Friends; then to *Rumsey*, and had a small Meeting; so to *Ringwood* Week-day Meeting, which was small, but pretty well; thence to *Pool*, and had a Meeting or two there, and then Home; being very glad that I succeeded so well, both as to Health and Ability of Mind, getting Home about the Middle of the Second Month 1747.

I now visited the Meetings in the Neighbourhood, until the 9th of the Third Month 1747, and on that Day took my Journey towards *Bristol* Yearly-meeting, and I had but one Meeting between Home and *Bristol*; the Meeting there was very large and well. From thence to the Quarterly-meeting for *Gloucestershire*, it was held at *Thornbury*, and I had a very satisfactory Time there: Thence I went to *Nailsworth*, was taken much out of Order in the Night, but went to Meeting, although not very fit for it; my dear Friend *Richard Champion* came there, and I went with him to his House, which made me think, by the Respect and Kindness he shewed, that he was an excellent sympathizing Friend in Affliction, for he soon, for my Encouragement said, *he would go to Worcester with me*, for the Meetings were appointed so far; and my worthy Friend went with me thither.

I was bravely recover'd by the Time I got to *Worcester*, having only *Cbeltenham* and *Tewksbury* Meetings between that and *Nailsworth*. I was at *Worcester* on First-day at three Meetings, and had good Satisfaction and Peace in them. I went thence to *Bromsgrove*, and had a small Meeting comfortable and well; thence to *Birmingham*, where I staid the Seventh-day, and went to *Coventry* on First-day, and was at two Meetings there, which were both open and well, but the latter more so than the first: From thence to
Hinkley,

Hinkley, Leicester, Castle-dunnington, and to *Nottingham* on First-day, where I was at their two Meetings, but few besides our own Professors were there ; the Meetings were tolerable well ; I had not very agreeable Service, to my own Apprehension, in some of the above Meetings, though some Friends thought my Doctrine suitable to their States, and that is the chief End which we ought to aim at. From thence I went to *Mansfield*, and had a very full Meeting at a Funeral, with which I had great Comfort and Peace : Thence to *Chesterfield, Sheffield*, and *Warnsworth*, and had tolerable good Opportunities ; thence to *Rawcliff*, and to *York* Quarterly-meeting, where I had good Service.

From *York* I went into *Holderness* by *Thorn, Ilthey, Malton, Cranfwick*, and *Beverley*, where was a Monthly-meeting, which was, I hope, serviceable, being a large Gathering of both Friends and other People of different Perswasions ; thence to *Hull, Welick, Oustwick, Hornsey*, and *Burlington* ; at *Oustwick* was a very large Meeting, the others but small, but not to complain of ; thence to *Scarborough*, where I staid a full Week, and was at two First-day Meetings, which were both large and comfortable ; I had seven Meetings in that Place to good Satisfaction ; then I had a small Meeting at *Stanton-dale*, and so to *Whitby*, and had three Meetings there, but they were laborious, being pretty hard to get through ; thence to *Moorfarnham*, and at *Castleton* had a small Meeting ; it being Harvest-time many Friends could not attend. From thence to *Kirby-Moorfarnham*, and lodged with my dear and worthy Friend *John Richardson* at *Hutton in the Hole*, and was at a very large Meeting at *Pickering*, called a Yearly-meeting, but it did not answer Expectation, many of the People, who were not Friends, coming to it as to a Revel, and would afterwards get drunk before they went Home, which gave Friends much Uneasiness, and room to consider, whether best to continue it or not.

I returned

I returned to my old worthy Friend *John Richardson*, whose Conversation and Company was very agreeable and profitable ; thence to *Kirby*, and had a very comfortable Meeting ; so to *Bilsdale*, *Yeaton*, *Stockton* and *Yarm*, had small Meetings, but pretty open and edifying. At *Yarm*, my Friend *Thomas Couldwell* of *Darlington*, and my worthy Friend *James Wilson* and his dear Wife, met me ; *Thomas Couldwell* was their Son-in-Law, and had a few Words in Meetings to good Satisfaction ; he was an innocent reputable Man, both in Ministry and Conduct.

James went with me through the County of *Durham*, where we visited most of the Meetings to *Newcastle* ; from thence we went into *Allendale*, and had a pretty large Gathering of Friends, the Monthly-meeting being there, and their Business was well conducted, and the Affairs carried on to Edification and Comfort. From thence to *Alstone-Moore*, had a pretty large Meeting, and a comfortable Opportunity, it being Monthly-meeting also : From thence to *Cornwood*, which was pretty full, and I had an agreeable Time. There being here some Convincement, I was opened to shew the Difference between a *true* and *false Ministry*, demonstrating the Qualifications of each, that they might judge, whether a *spiritual* Qualification, which sanctifies and purifies the Conscience, fitting it for the receiving the Knowledge of the divine Will, by Inspiration of the holy Spirit ; or a *human* Qualification by Literature and Books, with what they call *Ordination*, too often without the Sanctification of the Heart by the Word of Truth, was most likely to advance the Work of true Religion.

From this Place we went into *Cumberland* ; but after the first Meeting *James Wilson* went Home to look after his Affairs, it being Harvest-time ; but I visited *Cumberland* pretty thoroughly, and was at *Moorhouse* Meeting, and so to *Colbeck*, but was taken so ill there, that I could not attend that Meeting ; from
thence

thence I went to *Itbil* and *Cockermouth*, *Pardsey* and *Whitehaven*, but I was very weak and low in my Spirit, which rendered me very unfit for Service. I was at *Workington* on First-day, and had a very large and open Meeting, so that I was finely recruited, and gathered Strength both inwardly and outwardly : From thence I went to *Broughton*, *Allonby*, and to *Holm*, where was a troublesome Woman, in whom the Spirit, which influenced the *Pearsons*, was very strong ; she gave some Disturbance, especially to *John Urwin*, but no Body said any Thing to her ; and after I had spoke some Time, and concluded, she stood up and expressed something to this Effect, *Here is a great many fine Words put well together, but where is the Life ?* And in Meetings she would often cast forth Reproaches and Reflections on Ministers, both of the same County and also Strangers. From *Holm* we went round to *Wigton*, and I staid there over First-day, but *John Urwin* left me, I had two very edifying Meetings ; and from thence I went to *Moorhouse*, and had a tolerable good Meeting, and so to the Quarterly-meeting at *Carlisle*, which was very large, and I had good Satisfaction both in the Meetings of Business, and the Meetings of Ministers, to my great Comfort ; and these Meetings very much restored me, for I had been very low and weak with the Disorder I took at *Coldbeck*, but my Friend *John Urwin* was of singular good Service to me.

In the Visit from *Carlisle* to *Penrith*, I went with my Friend *John Wilson* and his Brother *Crowdson*, who were so kind as to meet me at *Carlisle*, and we had a very large, good, open Meeting, and I doubt not, the Power of Truth was eminently felt that Day by some. From thence I went to *Great Strickland* Monthly-meeting for Discipline, and to *Shap*, and had some Service, although I was dejected and low ; and always when I was in that Condition, I endeavoured in secret to be still, waiting in Patience, with fervent Prayer

that I might be preserved in the Simplicity of the Gospel, to appear just as the Truth assisted, carefully guarding against forming any Image or Likeness from a wrong Root, lest I should offend my Master, as *Israel* did in *Moses's* Absence, by forming to themselves that dumb lifeless Idol the *Calf*, to worship after the manner of the *Egyptians*.

From *Shap* I went to *Kendal*, the Quarterly-meeting for *Westmoreland* being there, it was very large, and I was much opened in it, having very satisfactory Service both to myself and sundry Friends: From thence I went to *Lancaster* to the Quarterly-meeting for that County, and had there very agreeable Service. These three Quarterly-meetings succeed one another, viz. *Cumberland*, *Westmoreland*, and *Lancashire*, and are the largest of any I know of in this Nation, and falling so in a Line, gave me the better Opportunity to attend them; I staid at *Lancaster* over First-day, and had some Service there, where were two Meetings, and both pretty large. From *Lancaster* I went to *Telland*, and had a small hard Meeting, my Friend *Robert Chambers* and Wife met me here, and I went Home with them, and so to *Prestaign* Meeting next Day; it was but small and heavy, my Friend *Sarah Wilson*, *James's* Wife, and some other Friends from that Side, met me there, with whom I went to *Brigflats* Meeting, it was a fine Gathering, and a comfortable Time. Thence to *Dent's* Town, where was a General-meeting, which was pretty large and well: Thence to *Garfdale*, and *Ravenstonedale*, and had two small Meetings which were edifying, altho' not without some Mixture of Uneasiness and Trouble, chiefly occasioned by Unfaithfulness and Indolence prevailing on sundry Professors, from whom one might expect much better by their Appearances, and the Places they aimed to fill in the Church: Thence to *Brigflats* Meeting on First-day; and their Monthly-meeting for Discipline being on the Fourth-day following, I staid there, and all was conducted to Edification
and

and Comfort ; thence to *Grayrigg*, a small Meeting ; so to *Crook*, where some Friends from *Windermore* met me ; it was but a small Meeting, and we had but a low, poor Time. I came back to *Kendal*, and was at the First-day Meetings, that in the Afternoon was large, and I opened pretty clearly the Difference betwixt a *natural*, and a *spiritual State*, shewing the Necessity of the last, in order to qualify for the Knowledge of divine Things, as that Knowledge is not to be attained to by the natural Man ; we had an edifying and good Time. *James Wilson's* was my Home while at *Brigflats*, and *John Wilson's* at *Kendal*, during my Stay there.

I went from *Kendal* to *Bentham*, and had a considerable large Meeting to Satisfaction ; thence to *Settle*, and was at their Monthly-meeting for Discipline ; thence to *Skipton*, and had a small Meeting there ; and so to *Bradford*, where I was on First-day, and had pretty good Satisfaction ; this Week gave me a good Degree of Ease and Chearfulness of Mind : Thence to *Rawdon*, *Leeds*, *Gildersham*, and to *Bradford* Monthly-meeting, which was very small, chiefly occasioned by the Inclemency of the Weather, it being very heavy Rains and a great Flood ; and I returned to *Leeds*, and so back to *Rawdon*, and to the Monthly-meeting at *Asquith*, where I met with dear *Benjamin Kidd* ; the Meeting was pretty large, and I think to good Purpose. I returned to *Leeds* on First-day, it being my last and farewell Meeting ; the Widow *Horner's* House was my Home, and in it I had great Peace of Mind and Consolation, though she was at that Time under a very trying Exercise, which gave her some uneasy Thoughts ; but considering the great and close Trials she had undergone, she bore it with great Decency and Patience, plainly demonstrating, that she was highly favoured of Truth, and always dwelling near it, to the Comfort of her Family, and all sensible Friends who had the Opportunity of her desirable and edifying Conversation.

I left *Leeds*, and went to *Wakefield* to a Funeral, on which Account the Meeting was somewhat larger, tho' it was a very stormy Day, and much Snow fell at that Time; *John Scott* was with me, and we had a tolerable good Opportunity: Thence I went to *Pontefract*, and had a small Meeting; it was a deep Snow, and very hard Frost, which made it very bad Travelling; thence to *Warnsworth* to their Monthly-meeting, where *Roger Shackleton* met me, and staid with me till after First-day, *John Scott* being still with me, but *Roger* then returned Home; we went from thence to *Blyth* in *Nottinghamshire*, to the Funeral of a worthy Elder and Minister, and had a very large Company, who were orderly and sober in their Behaviour; thence to *Hansworth Woodhouse*, and had a small Meeting; thence to *Sheffield*, and had two large Meetings there to pretty good Satisfaction: I stop'd one Night at my Friend *Peter Aclam's* at *Cutthorp*, and then I went to *Chesterfield*, and had a small Meeting there, and so to *Mansfield*, and had another small one; thence to *Nottingham* Week-day Meeting, and so to *Leicester* on First-day, here *John Scott* left me. The Morning-meeting was but small, but that in the Afternoon was much larger, and both were to pretty good Satisfaction. I was at two or three small Meetings in the County, and then I came back to the Quarterly-meeting at *Leicester*, where I had a satisfactory Time before the Business came on, which was conducted with Prudence and Love.

From *Leicester* I went to a general Monthly-meeting, in a Parish called *Wigston-two-Steeple*s on First-day, where the Meeting was pretty large, and to good Satisfaction; and that Evening came back to a Meeting at *Leicester*, *Benjamin Holme* being there also, and the Meeting was well and comfortable: Thence to *Hinkley*, and had a comfortable Time, and so to *Nuneaton*, and had a very large Meeting, which I hope was to good Purpose; then to *Coventry* Week-day Meeting, and to
Atherston;

Aiberston; these Meetings were of some Service, but not large: Thence to *Warwick* on First-day, and had an Evening-meeting the Third-day following, which were all comfortable Opportunities: Thence to *Henley* and had a small Evening meeting; but Friends were too negligent in acquainting their Neighbours, for which I had Cause to blame them in several Places. From thence I went to *Birmingham*, and was at their Sixth-day Meeting, which was small; I staid over First-day, and had two Meetings to pretty good Satisfaction, and I was comforted; the Fourth-day following I was at their Monthly-meeting, which was well conducted, and I had an edifying Time in it to the Elders, to keep their Places as Watchmen over the Youth, and to be good Examples, and to take Care the Poor were not neglected, but assisted in due Season. From thence I went to *Stourbridge* and *Bewdley*; at *Stourbridge* we had a fine large Meeting, sundry People came in, besides Friends, and it was of good Service: From *Bewdley* I went to *Worcester* on First-day, the Morning-meeting was small and heavy, but that in the Afternoon was large and more open; from thence to *Tewksbury*, and had a very open, good, edifying Opportunity, though but a small Meeting; thence to *Cbeltenham*, where altho' I requested Notice might be given, it was neglected, and the Meeting was very small; from thence to *Painswick*, where I much press'd Notice might be given to their Neighbours; I likewise gave several Notice of the Meeting myself, desiring them to acquaint others of it, and by this Means we had a large and open Meeting; I hope it was of good Service to some, they being very sober and attentive: From thence to *Nailsworth*, and although it is a very considerable Meeting, if not the largest in the County, it was very small, yet we had a comfortable Time together. Thence I went to *Thornbury* on First-day to a Funeral, which was very large and open; from thence to *Bristol*, and was at the Third and Sixth-day

N 3

Meetings,

Meetings, and on First-day at two Meetings, which were all well and comfortable; thence back to *Thornbury* to the Funeral of a worthy Elder, *Thomas Ally*, he was much respected, which his Neighbours manifested by giving their Attendance at the Meeting, which made it very large; and many divine Truths were opened, which appeared to Satisfaction, there being Teachers of sundry Professions, who were very attentive: Thence to *Frenchay*, a small Meeting, and so to *Bristol*; I was at the Sixth-day Meeting, and at a Funeral in *Temple street*, where many of the People called *Methodists* came; I staid over First-day, and had two Meetings, being edified in both, but the last in *Temple-street* rather exceeded: From thence I came to *Dassil* near *Sbip-ton-Mallet*, and had a very satisfactory Meeting at *Roscombe*, about a Mile off *Dassil*, where sundry *Baptists*, *Methodists*, and other Dissenters came, being all very sober and attentive; and indeed what much contributed to enlarge the Number was, that the *Baptist* Teacher gave Notice both to his own People and the Inhabitants of the Place, and gave his Attendance himself; and after Meeting he came to the Friend's House, where we dined, and desired a little Conversation, which was readily complied with; this gave some reason to think he intended to *object*, but it proved to the contrary, for he was rather too much abounding in his Praise, commending what he had heard more than I approved of, wanting to know, whether I had not studied that Sermon (as he call'd it) before I came there: My Answer to it was, *I knew not when I came there, whether I should have any Thing to say or not, so far I was from having any Thing provided before hand* He said it was a very good Sermon, and very suitable for them who heard it. He was very loving, and so we parted.

From *Roscombe* I came to *Long-sutton*, and had a small Meeting; thence to *Sherborne* Meeting, the smallest I ever was at, or had in that Place, and to
but

but little Satisfaction ; the Smallness of the Number was much owing to the want of Notice to the Town's People ; from thence to a Funeral at *Yeovill*, of an ancient Woman of ninety five and upwards ; a large Company of Neighbours attended the Corps, and we had a good Time, the People being very serious, and seemed edified with what was spoken ; from thence I came Home, it being the 16th of the Twelfth Month 1747.

I staid at Home, and visited the neighbouring Meetings until the 2d of the Third Month 1748, and then went towards *Bristol* Yearly-meeting, but had no Meeting till I came there, except the Monthly-meeting for the North Division of the County of *Somerset*, and though it was very small, the Affairs thereof were conducted with Prudence and Judgment ; thence to *Bristol* Yearly-meeting, which was to general Satisfaction.

From *Bristol* I went to *Bath*, and had a small Meeting, and so to *Pickwick* ; I had a small Meeting at *Corsham*, and then went to *Bradford* on First-day ; the Morning-meeting was small, but pretty open, that in the Afternoon was very large, and I was concerned to distinguish between the *Theory* and the *practical Part* of true Religion, and many of the People called *Methodists* being there, were very attentive ; all was quiet, and ended well ; thence I went back to *Pickwick* to the Mens Monthly-meeting, and the adjourned Quarterly-meeting for the County, it was very small, which manifested too much Neglect amongst the Elders of the Society there for the Service of these Meetings. From thence I came to the *Devizes*, *Melksham*, and *Market-Lavington*, and had a Meeting at each Place, which were pretty comfortable ; so to *Salisbury* on First-day, and had two large Meetings there : A great many *Methodists* came to both Meetings, and were in their Appearance and Behaviour very agreeable ; several were partly convinced, and

constantly attended Meetings ; I had very suitable Doctrine to their unsettled States, and seeking Conditions, for they seemed to be enquiring the Way to the Kingdom, with their Faces thitherwards ; and I hope there will be an Increase in that Place to our Society.

From *Salisbury* I went to *Alton*, and had but one small Meeting there, and so for *London* to the Yearly-meeting, which was very large ; and many hopeful young People of both Sexes attended it, who seemed very likely to come up in the Places of the Faithful already gone, and a going to their long Homes, and my Heart rejoiced to see and find in them a right Concern for the Cause of the Gospel, and Zeal to keep up the Testimony their Parents joyfully suffered for : We had several acceptable and edifying Times, and the Affairs of the Meeting were conducted in great Love and Condescension, and ended well ; the last or concluding Meeting was very large, and the only one I had a particular Concern for before I left Home, but I was almost shut out, being so narrowed up for Time by those who appeared before me, that it seemed quite unseasonable and dangerous to hold the Meeting longer, and not like to comport with the Health of the People ; but yet my Age and Infirmary considered, and it appearing doubtful whether I might have the like Opportunity, and being press'd in Spirit thereto, I stood up under great Fear and Weakness ; but I was immediately strengthened by the good Word of Life, through which I was helped, and came off beyond my Expectation, being afterwards filled with divine Peace and Consolation, which confirmed me that I was in my Place and Duty.

I staid in *London* over First-day, but had no Service in publick Ministry, except at the Morning-meeting of Ministers on Second-day, where I was very much drawn forth to the Ministers, the Meeting being very large with Country Friends, and I was much comforted

comforted in that Meeting. Next Morning I went, with my worthy Friend *Samuel Waring*, by *Essex* to *Alton*, and staid their First-day Meeting, and had a Meeting at *Great Fraile*, and staid the Monthly-meeting at *Alton*, which was comfortable and well, tho' not much Appearance of Service : From thence I went to *Rumsey*, but was taken very ill on the Road, and was very much fatigued, but next Day was bravely recovered, and had a small Meeting with the two Families, which was very comfortable ; thence to *Ringwood* on First-day, and had two open Meetings ; the next Day was their Quarterly-meeting, where their Affairs were well conducted : The Day following was the Yearly-meeting of the two Counties of *Southampton* and *Dorset*, pretty large both in the Forenoon and Afternoon, and were of good Service to Appearance. Thence to *Pool* to the Quarterly-meeting of *Dorsetshire*, and I staid there over First-day, and had two pretty full Meetings, especially the last, which was very large and open ; many divine Truths were clearly and plainly declared to the People, who by their Stilness and Attention manifested a good Disposition to hear and be informed ; I staid the Fourth-day, and then came Home the last Day of the Fifth Month 1748.

*An Account of my JOURNEY to Bristol
Yearly-meeting, and to London, Norwich, &c.*

I Left Home the 17th of the Second Month 1749, and had one Meeting at *Croscoume*; or *Coscoome*, near *Shipton-Mallet*, to good Satisfaction; thence to *Bristol*, and staid the Yearly-meeting, where I had some very agreeable Opportunities, both in the select and publick Meetings. Being clear of that Place, I proceeded by *Chippenham*, *Caln*, and *Marlborough*, and had a Meeting in each Place; thence to *Newbury*, being First-day, and had two Meetings, the last pretty large and agreeable; thence to *Reading*, *Henley*, *Wickham* and *Uxbridge*, had but small Meetings, tho' satisfactory Opportunities at each Place: From *Uxbridge* I went to *London*, and had sundry very acceptable Times in the select Meetings of Ministers, and was largely opened in the publick Meetings, and I found my Concern to grow upon me; but when I was clear I left *London*, in Company with *John Wilson* of *Kendal*, who went to visit his Wife, who had received some Hurt by a Fall from her Horse near *Billerica*; she lodged at a Friend's House in a Parish called *Stock*, and I lodged at my Friend *Samuel Arnold*'s Country-House. We found *John*'s Wife finely recovered, and we rode together next Day to *Colchester*, being the 27th of the Third Month, the Yearly-meeting beginning next Day, and the Quarterly-meeting for the County the Day following, and the select Meeting of Ministers on the Morning of the Third-day of the Week, which appeared to me but of little Advantage; but the publick Meetings were both very large and edifying, and ended well, and to good Satisfaction. Thence to *Maningtree*, and had a small Meeting, and so to *Ipswich*, and was at their Weekly-meeting

meeting in Company with *Jane Hoskins* (formerly *Fenn*) and *Elizabeth Hudson*, both from *Pensilvania*, who had agreeable Service amongst Friends: I staid in *Ipswich* over the First-day, and the last Meeting was very large, being appointed about the fourth Hour in the Afternoon, and many of sundry Professions were there, and were very attentive and sober, and some very much affected and broken into Tears, so that I hope that Meeting was of Service to many: I was largely opened on the Subject of *working out our own Salvation, and the Means whereby it is attainable.*

From *Ipswich* I went to *Woodbridge*, it being the Quarterly - meeting for the County of *Suffolk*, and there being some Uneasiness amongst them, Friends were concerned to advise them to a Reconciliation, lest by continuing in their Uneasiness, they should be wounded by a Breach of Union and Affection. The Meeting, by Adjournment, held all Day, and Friends seemed in a tolerable Sweetness and Condescension one to another, though a party contentious Spirit had too much got in among them. Next Morning was a Meeting of Ministers, to good Satisfaction; and then the Yearly-meetings of Worship followed, which were exceeding large, and the Parting-meeting the Day following; they were all very much to Satisfaction: In the Parting-meeting I was much enlarged on the *progressive Advancement* in a living and saving Faith, which is the very Life of true Religion; and we had a small Meeting the Day following, being their Weekly - meeting. Then I went to *Brandon*, *Edmund Peckover* being with me, and he had very good Service, and the Meeting ended well; then I went back to *Woodbridge*, and staid over First-day, but there were very few besides Friends, tho' it was expected the last Meeting would have been large, but for want of Notice it was not. Thence to *Layston* and *Peason-ball*, and *Beckles*, and had a small Meeting at each Place, but to tolerable Satisfaction; thence to
Mutford

Mutford and *Paikfield*, and had as large Meetings as the Accommodation would permit ; what was chiefly wanting, was Room for the People in both Places ; thence to *Yarmouth*, and had a pretty large Meeting to Edification ; thence to *North-Walsbam*, and had a small Meeting to little Purpose ; thence to *Norwich* Yearly-meeting, which was very large : I was enlarged on the *Qualifications* of true Ministers, shewing, that without the divine Aid of the Spirit of Truth, that Work could not be rightly performed to the Edification of the Hearers.

From *Norwich* I went to *Lamas* General-meeting, which was very large, too much for the House to contain, but the People were very quiet ; thence back to *Norwich*, staid there the Week-day and First-day Meetings following, where I had ten Meetings, tho' in two of them I had nothing to say, and the Meetings were mostly very large and to good Purpose, being full enough for my natural Strength to go through with ; but thankful and glad I was, finding inward Strength and Assistance every Day to help me through so well, to my own Comfort and his Praise, who is God blessed for ever ; and he has given me Faith to believe, that so long as he engages my Mind in the Work of the Ministry, he will give a fresh Supply of Strength, both inward and outward, adequate to his Requirings. From *Norwich* I came to *Mattishal*, *Windbam* and *Teasborough*, and had a Meeting at each Place, the last was enlarged considerably with Friends from *Norwich* ; Things were middling, no Cause of Complaint ; but I was under great Poverty of Spirit in these small Meetings ; Thence to *Diss* to a general Meeting ; Friends from *Norwich* and other distant Places came in and attended us, that it laid me very low indeed ; but I saw in the Opening of divine Virtue, that as the Blessing of Christ my Master, upon a small Quantity of but plain and low Food, gave Satisfaction to a Multitude, more than we were like
to

to be, so I found it best to retire to my Gift, and be still : The Meeting was very large, quiet, and well, and I was concerned to set forth the Folly and Emptiness of all Forms of Religion, without the Virtue and Power of the Spirit of Christ, and was opened on this Subject very largely, much to my own Satisfaction, all being quiet and well. Thence to *Bardwell*, and had a small Meeting, which was pretty well ; thence to *Bury*, and so to *Ratlesdon* ; I had three Meetings at *Bury*, and one at the other Place, all to pretty good Satisfaction.

From *Ratlesdon* I went to *Walden*, *Roxton*, and *Baldock*, and so to *Hitching*, but had but low Times in all these last Meetings ; thence to *Hertford* and *Ware*, and had tolerable good Satisfaction in both Places ; thence to *Bishop-Stortford*, and *Dunmow*, and had a small Meeting at each Place ; and so to *Chelmsford* on First-day ; Things were well and comfortable : Thence to *Billerica*, and had a small Meeting, and then went with my Friend *Samuel Arnold* to his House, in a Parish called *Stock*, and staid some Days, and then came with him to *London*, being the 20th of the Sixth Month 1749.

I staid in Town several Weeks, and my Concern grew upon me, and being fill'd with Gospel Virtue, I had some very agreeable Service, visiting all the Meetings in the City, some three or four Times over, and the First-day Meetings were very full, but Week-day Meetings were small.

Finding myself easy and clear of the Town, I left it in great Peace on the 3d of the Eighth Month 1749, and came to *Essex* to a small Meeting, so to *Guildford*, *Godalmin*, and *Alton*, *Basingstoke*, *Baghurst*, and *Andover*, and had some very agreeable Times, and in the main was pretty well satisfied. Thence to *Salisbury*, and had a very full Meeting, sundry *Methodists* being there ; so to *Fording-bridge*, and was at a Funeral, where many People attended ; I had good Satisfaction
in

in being there, and left the Place in much Comfort and inward Peace ; thence to *Ringwood*, and had a pretty large Evening-meeting to good Satisfaction, thence to *Pool*, and so to *Weymouth*, and had Opportunities in both Places ; and from thence I came Home, being the 2d of the Ninth Month 1749.—

From this Time it does not appear that our dear Friend kept any Account of the Meetings he attended, but upon Application to his Monthly-meeting, they sent us the following brief Testimony of his Service, from the Time he finished his Journal to his Decease, viz.

From our Monthly-meeting held at Bridport, the 21st of the Ninth Month 1755, to Friends at their Second-day's Morning-meeting in London.

Dear Friends and Brethren,

THE Journal of our dear and worthy Friend *Samuel Bownas*, seems to break off somewhat abruptly, ending the 2d of the Ninth Month 1749, and we cannot find that he kept any Account of his Travels, Labours and Services in the Ministry, from that Time to the Time of his Decease, which was on the second Day of the Fourth Month 1753, during which Time he took no long Journeys ; for being advanced in Years, his Hands shook and Eye-sight failed him much, but he was very diligent in attending Meetings both at Home and in the Neighbourhood, for twenty or thirty Miles round, as long as his Health and Strength continued ; and his Ministry

Ministry was lively and powerful to the last, to the Edification and Comfort of those that were favoured with it, and his Removal was a great Loss to Friends in these Parts, but we have Reason to believe it was his great Gain, for in his last Illness, which was very short, he seemed quite sensible of his approaching Change, saying, *that he could not stay long with us, and hoped that kind Providence would be pleased to take him to himself.*

Signed in and on Behalf of the said Meeting, by

JOSEPH CURTIS,
ROBERT CURTIS,
THO. WESTCOMBE,
WILLIAM KENWAY,
JOSEPH HUTCHINS.

F I N I S.

BOOKS Printed and Sold by LUKE HINDE, at
the Bible in George-yard, Lombard-street.

THE Trial of Spirits, both in Teachers and Hearers: Testified from the *Word of God* to the *University* Congregations in *Cambridge*; by *William Dell*, Minister of the Gospel, and Master of *Convil* and *Gaius* College in *Cambridge*. Whereunto is added, a plain and necessary *Confutation* of divers gross *Errors* deliver'd by *Mr. Sydrach Simpson*, in a Sermon preach'd to the same Congregation at the COMMENCEMENT, Anno 1653. Wherein (among other Things) is declared, that the *Universities* (according to their present *Statutes* and *Practices*) are not (as he affirmed) answerable to the *Schools* of the Prophets in the Time of the Law; but rather to the idolatrous high Places. And human Learning is not a Preparation appointed by Christ, either for the right understanding, or right teaching the Gospel. With a brief Testimony against Divinity-Degrees in the Universities. As also *Luther's* Testimony at large upon the whole Matter. And lastly, The right Reformation of Learning, Schools and Universities, according to the State of the Gospel, and the Light that shines therein. pr. 1s. 6d.

Some brief Memoirs of the Life of *David Hall*; with an Account of the Life of his Father *John Hall*. To which are added, divers of his Epistles to Friends, on various Occasions. price 2s.

The *Christian* Progress of that ancient Servant and Minister of Jesus Christ, *George Whitehead*, historically relating his Experience, Ministry, Sufferings, Trials and Service, in defence of the Truth, and God's persecuted People, commonly called *Quakers*. In four Parts. price 5s. 6d. AP 59

The Life and Posthumous Works of *Richard Clavidge*, being Memoirs and Manuscripts relating to his Experiences and Progress in Religion; his Changes in Opinion, and Reasons for them: With Essays in Defence of several Principles and Practices of the People called *Quakers*. Collected by *Joseph Basse*. price 5s.

t
d
e
r
l
s
d
s
t
-
e
d
y
t
t
s
d
s
s
;
/
s
d
y
s
-
r
-
is
n
-
e